

**ATHEOS:**  
6 PATHS TO  
DESTRUCTION

---

VOLUME II

**EVILLUSION**

## DEDICATION

**You alone are the LORD;  
You have made heaven,  
The heaven of heavens, with all their host,  
The earth and everything on it,  
The seas and all that is in them,  
And You preserve them all.  
The host of heaven worships You.**

Nehemiah 9:6 (NKJV)

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

Preface_____	5
Title Page_____	9
1. THE REAL ISSUE_____	10
The Sobering Truth_____	10
The Debate In Its Essence_____	12
Grand Theft Autonomy_____	22
The Only Two Reasons For Embracing Evillusion_____	23
No Compatibility_____	29
“Theistic Evolution” Is An Impossibility_____	29
Incompatibility Charts_____	31
2. CLEAR-CUT TRUTH_____	43
3. ENTER DOUBT: HOW EONS WERE WEDGED INTO GOD’S 7-DAY ACCOUNT_____	58
4. TWO <i>SEPARATE</i> PATHS_____	68
The “Two Paths” Chart_____	72
Time-Points: A Brief History Of A Great Lie_____	73
5. TAKING STOCK: AD 1779+_____	91
Story-Time Break_____	96
BONUS! Dramatic Vignette_____	120
6. POST- <i>PRINCIPLES</i> (1830+)_____	123
Haeckel and Huxley_____	143
Some Reminders And Ramifications_____	147
One-Page Key Points Summary (“The Gist”)_____	159
Charles Darwin’s Other Cousin (The One He <i>Didn’t</i> Marry)_____	160
What About The Miller-Urey Experiment?_____	162
Looking At Luther_____	164
Checking In With Calvin_____	166
Allis Analysis_____	171
Turning To Van Til_____	176
7. POST-DATA PRINCIPLES_____	179
Lies vs. Reality Chart_____	181
Gospel Comparison Chart_____	183
Summary (185), Bibliography & Recommended Resources (187), Scripture Index (190)	

# IMPORTANT NOTES

The BIBLIOGRAPHY on pages 187-189 should serve as both a listing of used and recommended resources and my **Acknowledgments** as well. Even less than “standing on the shoulders of giants,” I see myself as peering out from the corner of the giant’s shirt-pocket. I’m small stuff in this world, but I truly value the dedicated, conscientious teacher-giants that God has so graciously provided in this very age. Even the leftish, atheistic Wikipedia can be harnessed to serve God’s purposes; God has used, after all, the likes of Pharaoh and Cyrus as unwitting accomplices to accomplish His will in history.

The SCRIPTURE INDEX on pages 190-194, as I suggest in the body of this work, could well be used as a Bible study of many essential truths connected to the origins and meaning of life. At some point, I may want to put together a booklet of all the Bible passages referred to in this work, printed out in their entirety, without my comment. But I’d be just as pleased to hear that someone else beat me to the punch!

## ABBREVIATIONS USED IN THIS WORK

### Books of the Bible

Gen = Genesis  
Ex = Exodus  
Lev = Leviticus  
Num = Numbers  
Deut = Deuteronomy  
Josh = Joshua  
1 Sam = 1 Samuel  
2 Sam = 2 Samuel  
1 Chr = 1 Chronicles  
2 Chr = 2 Chronicles  
Neh = Nehemiah  
Psa = Psalms  
Prov = Proverbs  
Ecc = Ecclesiastes  
Isa = Isaiah  
Jer = Jeremiah  
Dan = Daniel  
Hos = Hosea  
Mal = Malachi

Matt = Matthew  
Rom = Romans  
1 Cor = 1 Corinthians  
2 Cor = 2 Corinthians  
Gal = Galatians  
Eph = Ephesians  
Phil = Philippians  
Col = Colossians  
2 Thes = 2 Thessalonians  
1 Tim = 1 Timothy  
2 Tim = 2 Timothy  
Heb = Hebrews  
Jas = James  
2 Pet = 2 Peter  
1 Jn = 1 John  
Rev = Revelation

OT=Old Testament  
NT=New Testament

### Other

AD=*Anno Domini* (year of our Lord Christ)  
BC=before Christ  
Gr.=Greek  
HCSB=Holman Christian Standard Bible  
KJV=King James Version  
LIT=Literal Translation  
NKJV=New King James Version  
sic= “thus” (as is, spelling in original not altered)  
Str.=Strong’s Concordance numbering system, followed by #\_\_\_\_\_

## PREFACE

This work started out as the fourth chapter of a book that was to be titled, *ATHEOS: 6 Paths To Destruction*. ATHEOS (Greek for “without God”) was to serve as an acronym for 6 chapters on: *A*theism/agnosticism; *T*otalitarianism; *H*umanism; *O*ther religions (besides Christianity); and *S*till-future eschatology (“last things” teachings). After I’d written a rough draft of that first chapter on atheism/agnosticism, my “recreational” reading—central to my daily routine—began to gravitate towards the controversy on origins: creation vs. evolution. This wasn’t exactly a new mental toy to play with, but more like an old interest strongly revived. So for several weeks, I read, analyzed, and wrote in this area alone. Before long, I realized that a chapter would never cover what I had to say, and soon after that, I made the decision to expand ATHEOS into a trilogy (*three* books/three volumes in a *series* that would bear the name of the intended single book). That should explain the cover (page) to the reader, as well as the plan from here: this work was completed first, though it’s intended to be Volume II of the trilogy, and—Lord willing—the “*first*” volume (A-T-H, for Atheism-Totalitarianism-Humanism) and the *third* volume (O-S, for Other religions & Still-future eschatology) will follow in due course. That’s just FYI, so the number of *little* mysteries connected with this work can be reduced.

With that dry stuff now behind us, we can move on to the contents of this stand-alone book. This book could well be seen as a matter-of-fact attack on cracks, lacks, and quacks. Evolutionary “theory” is full of **cracks**: a cohesive, unified, well-founded system it isn’t. Evolution’s **lacks** are wall-to-wall, head-to-toe, and becoming more obvious all the time to anyone who cares to examine it with the slightest degree of objectivity. *Evolutionists* are the *real* pseudo-scientific **quacks** because they hang “SCIENTIST WITHIN” shingles on their lab doors and proceed to practice philosophy. If you don’t already catch what I’m implying, I’m confident that you *will* see what I mean as we go. But for now just remember this: the kind of science that puts satellites/weather balloons into low-earth orbit and leads to cures is *not* the same kind of science that makes *speculations* about how the

heavenly bodies and the whole “universe”—including all of its life—got there in the first place. Operational/working/observable-testable-repeatable-falsifiable science is Science, rightly-called, science as we normally think of it. But *origins science is another thing entirely; for those who dismiss God as the Creator, it’s NECESSARILY the realm of false, wishful-thinking PHILOSOPHY.*

See? “Matter-of-fact,” just as I indicated. Let’s briefly restate lesson #1. There are two kinds of science: 1) observing actual working conditions in the actual universe (*created earth-system*) and making judgments based on that data (gathered facts) and 2) *speculating* on the most-distant past (the beginning) without the benefit of eyewitness experience and reports (since nobody—except One—was there). Lesson #2 attaches itself quickly: those who promote the evil illusion of evolution—*evillusionists*—will ALWAYS BLUR THE LINES. From time to time, one of ‘em will let their guard down and allow the distinction between real, day-to-day science and once-only origins science to be made. That’s when the fun begins! Watch ‘em scramble, circle the wagons, and spit out excuses! And why is that? Simply because they know they’ve given away the battle plans; if someone sees that working-science gives no support for wishing-philosophy (real science can’t possibly prove evolution), the agenda is exposed, the jig is up!

In such a case—it happens often—the cracks in the foundation of Evillusion become wide fissures, and anyone who’s paying attention can see that there’s zero stability in the whole structure; it has to topple. And the quacks are exposed for what they are: God-opposing rebels posing as science-minded society-savers. So they *must* call out, “Keep moving! Nothing here for *you* to see!” Bottom line: the evillusionists have to be close to 100% consistent in their efforts to confuse real science with philosophy, just as the compulsive serial-liar must have close to 100% recall of the lies he or she has spun (see, for example, the Obamas or the Clintons; it has to be supremely difficult to constantly weave so many slices from the lives of so many *others* into your *own ever-expanding* lie-narrative). [2025 addition: selling lies as truth—without apology—has become the default position for all leftists]. But let’s turn from dedicated deceiver-destroyers to the **Source** of science (all *knowledge* and its process of discovery), unadulterated truth, and ***all life.***

Only the triune God was there at—and even *before*—The Beginning. So it's only natural to ask the *only eyewitness* about what went on when our material universe got its start. The Infinite One has graciously provided that exclusive and inerrant eyewitness testimony in the form of a written record, God's Word. That record is the very *mark* of consistency, as it hasn't changed—or *needed* to change—since the words were first spoken and given through inspiration (God-breathings). We might number this as Lesson #3 of the preface: **God defines**, and **man only opines** (gives an opinion). This is to be our rule throughout this work. **We'll take God at His word, since only He knows all, and only He speaks definitive truth always.** That's just the commonsense, matter-of-fact approach. Even if every reasoning person on the face of earth could somehow find total agreement on something, that thing isn't true if it doesn't line up with the God-defined facts in God's created order.

For our purposes, we'll simply define *truth* as *reality under God in His universe*. And since the universe in which we presently exist (under the Creator-God) is the only universe in which we *can* exist, all we really have to say is that TRUTH=REALITY. Ultimately, truth is absolute and objective because God is The Absolute and The Pronouncer of objective Fact. I ask you, fellow human: What's to be gained by buying into the *opinions* of the finite-minded ones who consciously buck *factual reality*? It smells like insanity to me! Especially when you consider that **reality under God in His universe includes the afterlife**, that *unending finality*, that inevitable reality towards which each one of us is hurtling, getting closer with each earth-second. Conscience tells us that this life will indeed pass, but then *individual accountability* awaits: one on One with God, The Judge who can't be fooled (**Heb 9:27 & 4:12-13**). Now that's as real as it can get! So don't even begin to think that what or whom you believe about origins is of no consequence, that it's just a matter of opinion. You couldn't be more wrong. It's a matter of fact and unalterable eternal destiny. You have to decide *now*—before YOUR JUDGMENT hits, and YOUR reality extends on into infinity—to take God at His word, and the Word of God, Jesus Christ, to be YOUR defense attorney. On your own, you can't possibly win. But with Christ, you can't possibly lose. Run *to* the Creator (**John 1:3, Col 1:16-17, 1 Cor 8:6**), and not *from* Him.

Isa 45:9, 12—(Thus says the LORD) Woe to him who strives with his Maker!...Shall the clay say to him who forms it, “What are you making?” Or shall your handiwork say, “He has no hands?”...I have made the earth, and created man on it. I—My hands—stretched out the heavens, and all their host I have commanded. (NKJV)

# EVILLUSION: THE EVIL ILLUSION OF EVOLUTION

ORIGINAL MANUSCRIPT: APRIL, AD 2014  
UPDATED AND RELEASED IN PDF: DECEMBER, AD 2025

STEVE RAUEN

# EVILLUSION

The evil illusion of evolution.

1

## THE REAL ISSUE

“No pleasure is comparable to be standing upon the vantage ground of truth...and to see errors, and wanderings, and mists, and tempests, in the vale below.” —Francis Bacon, *Of Truth*

If the prospect of arriving at real truth excites you, you’ll enjoy what follows. If both parts of Bacon’s statement above resonate with you, you’ll soon see what I mean. For together we *will* arrive at “the vantage ground of truth,” having seen errors, wanderings, mists, and tempests; lies and compromises, “defenders” and pretenders, sell-outs and would-be saviors, all scattered below. In the end, we’ll have made our way to the high ground, from where we can clearly see falsehood’s futility. Not only will we see that evolution is a hopeless and doomed evil illusion, but that the truth about origins is both available and unassailable, like The Truth Himself (**John 14:6, Rev 22:13, 17**).

## THE SOBERING TRUTH

As Bacon’s statement implies, truth stands in direct opposition to error and misleading deceptions (*wanderings and mists*), and it emerges victorious from raging controversies (*tempests*). While most of us tend to forget that a perpetual war is being waged in our world, the war *is* going on, with or without our

*conscious* personal involvement. Yet there's no sleeping on the battlefield. Everyone's involved in the war, like it or not, and everyone will take part in the outcome.

Unlike many conflicts between human factions, in *this* war, there can be no double-agents or neutral parties. There are only the two sides: there is the side of the God who created, who has said, **“He that is not with Me is against Me (Matt 12:30)**, and against whom (**“The LORD’s Anointed/Christ”**) the other side rages in vain, only to be laughed at and held in derision by “He who sits in the heavens” (**Psalm 2**). So it boils down to either being on **God’s side or the losing side**. Those who seek to reject God as the Creator can have no hope of prevailing even in that; He remains The Creator, say and do what one will. So why would so many humans, each one equipped with God-given reason and even the blessing of moral conscience, dedicate their energies and last breath to oppose the all-powerful One, The Almighty? After all, they *know*, deep down, and especially when they're alone with their thoughts in the dark stillness of the night, that *He* is there, and He's not going away. Why “kick against the pricks/goads?” (**Acts 9:5**). And why deliberately deface the image of God and claim instead to be descended from pond scum and apes (goo-to-you via-the-zoo)? Self-demotion—is that wise or desirable?

Well, since I'm no better at reading minds or peering into souls than anyone else, *on my own*, I can only offer speculation: misery loves company. For those who realize that the war can't be won and that defeat is certain, the only thing left to do is to prevent others from joining the victory; take 'em down with you, don't go down alone. This bitter attitude can be seen on a daily basis, no matter where one lives. Let a Christian express thanks to God for life, grace, forgiveness, food, shelter, employment, family, nice weather, or anything else, and witness the non-christian's response. Even bare acknowledgment of God is just too much for the atheist/agnostic, so the acknowledging one must be brought down from that “holier-than-thou” perch. Better yet, since such persons are obviously deluded and therefore unfit to survive, they can be eliminated with impunity. And why not? After all, consciences can be eroded to the point that the unseen God can be pushed out of the truth-suppressor's thoughts entirely, and when The Judge

is eliminated from the scene, guilt and punishment are, too. It's now an *anything-goes universe*, unbounded by any law except the "Survival Of The Fittest."

As already indicated, this is my own take on the issue at hand, based on observation of human nature on the *horizontal* plane, but *God* has a comprehensive, unfiltered view from above of not only general, universal human nature, but each and every individual heart, mind, and soul. A God-denier may pretend to not know God, but God knows the God-denier inside-out. This fact is brought out with breathtaking clarity in **Rom 1-3**, especially **1:18-32**; **Heb 4:12-13**; **Psa 69:5**; **Prov 15:11**. Passages from God's Word such as these—and *many* others—point to the utter folly of any human being who opposes the One who knows all plans and goals, and who has unlimited resources to defeat them. To oppose such an omniscient and Almighty One is sheer insanity; there's no rational thought present there. That fact reduces the set of possible motivations to one: **pure rebellion**. What I mean is this: if a *rational* person, one who is *not insane*, persists in battle against a foe who is *known to be invincible*, sheer rebellion is the only explanation for that behavior. Since autonomy (self-rule) can *not* be won, and this fact is known to the God-opposer, it all becomes rebellion for the sake of rebellion. And **that's evolutionary thinking at its base**. It's knowing God's existence and power and not liking it, so rebellion is the only course.

**Psa 66:7—He rules by His power forever; His eyes observe the nations; do not let the rebellious exalt themselves. (NKJV)**

## *THE* DEBATE IN ITS ESSENCE

Let's cut right to the chase. Since our stated object is to gain the vantage ground of truth, let's lay out the quickest, surest path to it. First, we must figure out what the *real* argument is about. Is it Science vs. Religion? No. It's not "good/real science" vs. "bad/non-science" either. And, surprisingly, considering that this author is coming from an unswerving Creationist perspective, it's not even a matter of faith in God vs. faith in science, or more specifically, the faith of evolution. Rather, the essential, bottom-line debate proposition distills to this,

*pro or con:*

## ACKNOWLEDGMENT OF GOD AS CREATOR AND GOVERNOR OF THE UNIVERSE.

Let me clarify: as we progress together through this work—if we have our thinking caps on—we’ll see that it really isn’t about naturalistic science vs. supernatural religion, science vs. pseudoscience, undirected evolution by chance mutations over vast eons vs. God-directed evolution, or anything involving true, operational, observable-testable-repeatable science at all. It’s *all* about

**acknowledging and accepting the authority of the Creator God who forever governs His universe by His unchanging rules.  
GOD’S UNIVERSE, GOD’S RULES.**

Now how can I be so bold in declaring this to be the most basic issue concerning creation vs. evolution? Simply put, the Word of God warrants it. Both The Word of God in His person (**John 1**) and the Word of God written (the Holy Bible, **2 Tim 3:16, Prov 30:5-6**) inseparably unite to convey this most basic message: the One True God described and quoted in the pages of Scripture, the *self-existing* One, has not only made all things besides Himself (**Gen 1, Psa 33, John 1, Rom 1, Heb 11:3**), but He holds all things together, moment-by-moment (**Neh 9:6, Col 1:16-17, Heb 1:2-3**). An *atheos* universe, a universe *without God* is an impossibility. Period. Only from a Being possessing *aseity* (*independent, wholly complete, eternal self-existence*) can any other life proceed. Life only comes from life, never from non-life; that’s capital-R Reality in God’s universe, the only one in which we live, the only one in which we even *can* live. Individuals can pretend otherwise, but there’s absolutely nothing to be gained by that denial, and everything to lose. So now we’re back to the plain, foundational fact of the matter: since evolutionists categorically reject God as the creator—“not an acceptable scientific explanation, since it goes beyond pure non-god materialism/naturalism”—they’ve rejected science itself, since its laws originate with the supernatural being, God. From Scripture, we can see that what’s really being rejected is not merely creationism or creationists, but The Creator-King Himself. Check out **1 Sam 8:7** for a parallel situation from history.

**For they have not rejected you, but they have rejected Me,  
that I should not reign over them. (NKJV)**

Maybe it's time for embattled creationists to remember this. While there can be real pain and offense dished out to us by evillusionists, their hate isn't concentrated on us, or ultimately meant for us. No, it goes all the way to the Eternal King; *He's* the One they're vehemently attacking with full-fledged fury. Again, their rebellion is inevitable, since they know these two truths by way of conscience: 1) God is the Creator, so to Him we all owe our lives and 2) we're all accountable for obedience to His unalterable rules and eternal rule; He is the King who can never be dethroned. And they do *not* like that situation one bit. So when you *know* you can't win and you're past the point of considering submission to your conqueror, you'll go down fighting, kicking and screaming, frantically pulling down any others within reach. *That's* where we human beings get dragged into the debate. Since evillusionists can't destroy God, they must pick on somebody smaller, and the most they can hope for is to destroy other human beings. Strictly speaking, we creationists are "collateral damage," as one mass-murderer put it. The real target is God, but their salvos are impossibly weak against Him; He who sits in the heavens shall laugh (**Psa 2:4**). What's more, we ought to be encouraged and strengthened by the example of Jesus Christ:

**Heb 12:3—For consider Him who endured such hostility  
from sinners against Himself, lest you become weary and  
discouraged in your souls. (NKJV)**

When the dethronement of the Almighty is finally seen as the hopeless, lost cause that it is, then it's time for Plan B, where some hollow "victories" can still be won. This means trotting out every desparate, nonsensical, tired old war-horse and throwing the battlefield into utter confusion with all of the usual smokescreens: spontaneous generation; big bang of nothing into everything; progress via random mutations; matter+time+chance=the explain-all theory; particles-to-people evolution; species definitions that change without notice, even in mid-sentence; fraudulent embryo drawings and horse-evolution sequences; manipulated "missing link" skulls, whales with legs, transitional "feathered dino-

saur,” *etc. etc. etc.* No ruse is left unused, since—for the dedicated God-opposer—there’s nothing left to lose.

All of this is to say simply: don’t be fooled by the hellbound. Don’t think for a minute that the Holy Creator God wants you to make excuses for them or allow them to think that just maybe they’re right. In fact, God’s Word backs me up on this. Here’s the Biblical, two-pronged strategy:

**Prov 26:4** advises the wise person to *not* answer a fool according to his folly (lest you be like him). In other words, do *not* buy into his “shtick”/nonsensical rap, with his shifting “three-card monte” definitions of terms like “species” and “evolution,” and complete exclusion of anything supernatural. If the fool chooses the battleground and strips you of your weapons, you’ll lose that (earthly, temporal) battle. So in this verse, we find the *negative* command: *don’t* join the fool in his folly, or you’ll become one, too.

**Prov 26:5** completes the strategy. In *this* verse, the *positive* command is issued: *do* answer the fool by showing him the absurdity of his own position. Make him see just how wrong he is by showing him where his thinking leads, as well as the consequences that logically follow: “If what you’re saying were true, then...” If used against someone who takes pride in their logical abilities, this can be very effective. “You’re a logical person, right?” can be the lead-in. No *tricks* will be necessary here if proper logic is employed, and the fool may yet be turned from his folly.

[For a full treatment of this approach, I heartily recommend Dr. Jason Lisle’s *The Ultimate Proof Of Creation* (more info in Bibliography); I must admit, the proper understanding of that Proverbs couplet had always eluded me until I read Dr. Lisle’s interpretation, which seems to be right on the mark]

Keep this in mind at all times: **evolution is an evil illusion. There’s nothing good in it, and there’s no truth in it.** Reader, if you think I’m overstating the case, think again. Hopefully, this book will help in that regard, but unless you see exactly what’s at the bottom of this whole controversy, that evolution is—at its core—mad, all-out opposition to God as the Creator-King, you’ll

still be prone to fall in with the doomed fools. Remember, it's not about two theories of origins, either of which could be valid. It's not even about two "faiths," for this ultra-simple reason: even ardent, sold-out, dyed-in-the-wool evolutionists can find *nothing in which to put their faith* when they reject God. They don't "believe" in evolution, they *reject belief* in God. BIG difference! It's not a matter of substituting faith in something other than God for faith in Him, but *not* believing at all. It's not like the undeniable scientific evidence has engendered faith in evolution. Consider the fact that a book's worth of quotes from the somewhat-doubting or more-honest evolutionists could be rounded up, none of which point to the actual *evidence* as the clincher for defection to the dark side of deception. Instead, the conclusion that's often made runs akin to this: "But to consider the alternative of special creation is unthinkable." At this point, we'll bring in just two such quotes that will support my thesis:

Richard Lewontin, 1997—*It is not that the methods and institutions of science somehow compel us to accept a material explanation of the phenomenal [observable] world, but on the contrary, that we are forced by our a priori [without/before experience] adherence to material causes to create an apparatus of investigation and a set of concepts that produce material explanations, no matter how counter-intuitive, no matter how mystifying to the uninitiated [yokels like you & me] Moreover, that **materialism is absolute, for we cannot allow a Divine foot in the door.***

If we excise the fancy science-speak, it boils down to this: God is banned from the Science Club, and "the uninitiated"—those who aren't members of The Club—must accept its explanations. This is not an appeal to convert to another religion, but a denial of The Divine (the triune God of the Bible). They're not bowing to Materialism, but using it as an excuse to write the Club rules in a way that keeps God and anything else supernatural *out*. Maybe this second quote will be clearer:

George Wald—*When it comes to the Origin of Life there are only two*

*possibilities: creation or spontaneous generation. There is no third way. Spontaneous generation was disproved one hundred years ago, but that leads us to only one other conclusion, that of supernatural creation. We cannot accept that on philosophical grounds; therefore, we choose to believe the impossible: that life arose spontaneously by chance! (The Charles Darwin Bible by Ray Comfort, p. 419)*

Don't let the use of the word "believe" confuse you or the issue. Wald isn't talking about *faith* in spontaneous generation; he says himself that it's "impossible." No sane person can *believe*—*trust in, or put full confidence in*—what he or she *knows* to be impossible. It has to remain a crutch, a tool, a fallback position, or a weapon of convenience, but it can never be an object of religious faith. There's a huge, qualitative difference between the Christian's faith in the knowable and known God and the groundless notion that "*it would be nice if* ... spontaneous generation were true."

Other aspects that should grab our attention are the two tip-offs: (1) "***only two possibilities***" exist in this War of the Origins—we agree 100% on that—and it's not a matter of historical-origins science that can be fit into presently-observable/testable/repeatable/falsifiable working science, but a matter that enters into (2) "***philosophical grounds***" —where creationists have an Eyewitness and evolutionists don't. Evillusionists must rely, as we've already seen, on *speculation* alone when they ignore or reject the testimony of God in His written Word. Only He was there, so only His testimony is admissible and credible. Clearly then, the great dividing line in the origins war is acceptance of and belief in God's testimony and God Himself or rejection of both. Creationists are more than happy to line up *with God*, and evolutionists *oppose* God at every turn. The scientific evidence, under the scientific method of operational-working science, can't ever prove *either* creation or evolution. However, we creationists believe the Star Witness, whereas the evolutionists reject Him in unhinged rebellion.

## TO ACCEPT GOD AS CREATOR-KING OR NOT, *THAT IS THE QUESTION*

Face it: the only reason that *anyone* can “do science”—true science—is because God has constructed a well-ordered, non-random universe in which the natural laws that He has put into it reliably apply. Predictability is what science is all about. In a chaotic environment in which “chance” is the rule (wow, is *that* a contradictory concept, or what?!), science would be flat-out impossible. Forget any formulas, explanations, theories, or facts. Why would any two atoms stop bouncing around forever at random and get together? Much less, *stick* together? Consist and persist to consist? No, that’s mindless nonsense; an undirected, purposeless, *non-unified uni* verse? C’mon, get real! So *now* we’re honing in on what’s really at issue: accept the reality of a God-created, God-ordered, God-upheld universe and His rules that govern it, or fight reality and suffer the consequences in this life and the unending afterlife. There it is; there’s the rub.

The following perceptive statement comes from page 242 of *Did God Create in 6 Days?* , where Morton H. Smith nails things down for us:

*...the non-Christian is not able to predicate anything. Or, to put it another way, the non-Christian view of facts is that they are “brute facts.” If that is so, then they are unrelated facts, and thus no relationships can be established between any facts in the universe. There is no cause-and-effect relationship, no reason why 2 plus 2 must always equal 4 today. There can be no science on this basis. There can be no understanding of any facts of the universe on the basis of a chance universe.*

To that I can only add a summary-reminder: **all facts of the created universe go back to The Creator; all truths are anchored in Him and originate with Him.** The obvious corollary is this: *without The Creator God, there is no science. No God, no science, no life. Period.*

The struggle could not be more basic, nor could the battle lines be drawn any clearer. It's God vs. non-god, order vs. chaos, Life vs. death, truth vs. lies, The Truth vs. Belial, eternal heavenly bliss or never-ending fires. It's a matter of pure contrast, not synthesis, compromise, or gray areas; it's either-or. Either God was the Beginner and is the King, or he is not *period*. And if he didn't exist, neither could anything else. Since things exist—it's a fact in hand (sorry, Hindus)—*non*-existence of the things that *are* is out the window, not a possibility. Since everything that begins to exist has to have had a cause—a law of real science, *causality*—a *self-existing Beginning Being is required* to start off all other things. Since even God-opposers must admit, through adherence to the scientific laws, that such a Beginner is required, all are left to recognize what *must* be: there is One who has begun, and He is the cause. From there, it's purely a matter of choice: accept what must be and *is* or be crushed by reality when you rebel.

[Oh, and Bill Clinton, ...we don't need you to explain what "is" means; moral, sane folks understand that without your help!]

When the outer layers are peeled back, the core discussion is exposed to the light. Since neither creation nor evolution can be proved by working, operational science—we've stepped outside of the realm of the presently observable, testable, and repeatable, and into the realm of the unobservable, unrepeatable, one-off past, *the point of beginning*—it boils down to faith in the Creator-God, the only One who was there, or *non*-faith/*anti*-faith in the beginning Being. In other words, because of the overwhelming 24/7 testimony of general revelation and innate human *conscience* (literally, "with knowledge"), the choices aren't even between *two* faiths, but acceptance or rejection of one (or, *the* One).

When we creationists refer to the adherents of evillusion as having *faith* in evolution, we're not being entirely accurate. We are near the mark, but not on it. When we're making that assertion, the subject is the complete lack of evidence for large-scale, all-encompassing evolution, so it's seen that evolutionists must resort to a blind faith of sorts to get themselves through the day; it's either that or total despair that leads to suicide or insanity (look at Ernest Hemingway and

Friederich Nietzsche, respectively). But *most* accurately, I reiterate, we should say that the evolutionist does *not* have faith in anything whatsoever, and he has his feet planted firmly in mid-air; he takes his undefined place among the ever-floating atoms in an undefined, purposeless universe. He/she rejects faith itself, silently trusting only for a *time* in the natural laws that are in place, but ultimately rejecting all order and the Lawgiver Himself.

In 2009, the Freedom From Religion Foundation (FFRF) ran a billboard campaign which urged everyone to “Praise Darwin” and to “Evolve Beyond Belief.” How cute, eh? We can easily find three things that tie in at this point of the discussion. First, FFRF is headed up by Dan Barker and his wife, Annie Laurie Gaylor, two publicly-professed atheists. Freedom *from* religion, remember? Second, although they themselves do not have faith in Darwin—so neither would they *praise* him—any praise *not* directed to God is praise with which they can live. Hey, if people want to waste their time *believing* in things other than “God,” well, that’s just *their* problem, right? Which brings us to the third tie-in: “Evolve BEYOND Belief.” Get past belief *entirely*, that’s the real thrust. To atheists, the whole game is to win freedom from religion, moral constraints, personal responsibility, and any outside authority. ***All atheists must be evolutionists.*** They’ve cut themselves off from Biblical Creation by cutting themselves loose (they think) from the Creator-God; the ONLY alternative is non-god, purposeless, blind change-by-chance. Exit God and faith, enter Evillusion, the non-faith.

So we can see by this that atheists don’t necessarily have to be out-front evolutionists, even if that *is* their default position on origins. But by rejecting God outright, they reject the Creator and adopt the chance-universe antithesis automatically. They become, then, natural co-belligerents: they’re naturally on the same side in The War—with the evillusionists and against God. In the example given above, the out-front atheists merely used Darwin and evolution as a means of misdirection: Hey, everybody, eyes off God! Flee the Taskmaster and free yourselves from all restraints!

Again, all *know* God is there; *some* just hate that fact, so rebellion becomes the only activity that keeps the resentful ones going. Stating it differently, it is **faith vs. non-faith; it is acceptance or rejection of both God and the**

**steady testimony of conscience; theism (God-ism) or anti-theism (anti-Godism).** The contention here is that, since the God-opposer knows—if even a shred of rationality and conscience remain—that the war is ultimately lost, all that’s left to do is to prolong and widen the war. The battle cry: Don’t Go Down Alone! The banner: Rebellion To The End!

**Luke 19:14—We will not have this man to reign over us (NKJV)**  
**John 1:11—He came to His own things/domain, and His own people did not receive Him (NKJV)**

There you have it: God’s own characterization of evillusionists. It’s not about a viable alternative to creation. Rather, it’s a recruitment ploy to lure others into their mad, futile rebellion. *They* know The King is the legitimate ruler, and they know that His reign is inseparably rooted in His role as The Creator. Furthermore, *they* know that their rebellion can’t possibly succeed, but they’ll do anything to keep *others* from knowing it. Because if others knew all of this, there’s no way they’d be so foolish as to join them in their hellbound journey. That much sense they retain. Subterfuge, then, remains the most effective strategy. Keeping you in the dark keeps you, too, headed towards eternal darkness.

Once more: misery does indeed love company. And again, victory is not the object of the evillusionists, but *maximum destruction*. They’d like nothing more than for you and I and everyone else to go down with them, so *everybody* loses, including (they think) God, who’s thus shortchanged of His due glory. Do you see it now? For the one who wants to give God His due, the choice is clear, a “no-brainer”: God’s way is the only way to go. But for the one who resents God, God’s way might be the only way to go, but it must be rejected out of rebellious spite. It’s all about denial and destruction, or *nihilism*. Evolutionary theory doesn’t win converts by putting forth convincing evidence—there’s none of that to be had—but because it’s the non-God alternative; it provides a convention hall for all God-opposers.

## GRAND THEFT AUTONOMY

One other related point must be revisited and expanded somewhat in the present context. There's the matter of scientists making use of the tools that exist *only* because creation is *true* to "prove" *non*-creation. As previously mentioned, Dr. Jason Lisle has written an excellent book, *The Ultimate Proof of Creation*, that lays out the watertight argument that evolutionists *must* co-opt the tools made available by the Creator in order to *try* to prove their *non*-God system! *All* scientists must work within the bounds set by God, and *all* scientists who would do *true science* benefit from *God's installed laws* of natural order and processes—*predictability*—and science without predictability is no science at all. Predictability/reliability/established order is the very marrow of the scientific method. None of the cosmic dots can be connected without it, and it was put there by God, The Creator. Evolutionists can't even begin to explain predictability in an unordered universe such as they propose and require for their system.

Let me illustrate. Think of the absolute absurdity of your *weaponless attacker* asking for and securing *your* weapons to subdue you, all in order to claim superiority over you! Yet this is what goes on, time after time. God has equipped the responsible, law-abiding citizens of His domain with the weapons for self-defense, and we hand 'em over to our attackers! What are we thinking?! *Are* we thinking? When we forfeit ground already won by our Commander, are we being loyal to Him? How can we even begin to think so?

No! *Don't* defect to the *losing* side, *don't* lay down your weapons, and *don't* aid or abet the foe. All of that is treason to Christ, the Creator-Commander. Take part in the victory by obeying God's commands—all for our own good—and fighting valiantly for what is known to be the *winning* cause!

"Grand theft autonomy?" What's that all about? It's simple: evolutionists that don't have a vehicle of their own must steal yours to run you over. And what they're really after is *autonomy*, or self-rule. A non-God universe is the *utopia*, the *ideal* for the autonomists. They don't like God, and they don't like *you* if you like God. No more needs to be said about that. That's where the rubber meets the road, and you're in between the two. If you get in the way of their godless utopia,

you have to be crushed.

## THE ONLY TWO REASONS FOR EMBRACING EVILLUSION

1. You don't accept the authority of God as Creator and Sole-Proprietor of His universe.
2. You haven't thought things through.

We've spent a lot of time on the first reason, so let's move on to the second, and flesh that out.

Primarily in view is the idea of synthesis between creation and evolution, or what's usually called, *theistic evolution*. Like all unnatural hybrids, it doesn't work. The basic idea is that God supposedly used evolution in the creative process, with the upshot being a blend of "religion" and "science." In other words, a truce is established between warring parties, and both sides are supposedly appeased; everybody's happy! Not even close. In reality, nobody gains a thing by such an arrangement, and truth is sacrificed on the altar of SCIENCE. "Theistic Evolution" is an oxymoron, a two-legged stool with both legs broken. It's only good for firewood.

Here, briefly, is the fatal problem, and why thinking Christians and non-Christians alike can see that it's a nonsensical notion: *utter incompatibility*. Just look at the two terms that are to be wed to each other. *Theistic* means God-oriented, something having to do with God. A *theist* believes that a divine being exists and possesses supreme power, including the power of being the First Cause, or Creator; the theist responds to the general revelation of nature but looks above it to its Creator; furthermore, the theist responds to the witness of conscience and doesn't fight it. All told, the theist doesn't oppose God. On the other hand, *the evolutionist is necessarily anti-theistic*, and he/she stands in direct opposition to the concepts of the existence of a living, real God, His role as the Creator of the universe, His ongoing sovereignty and authority to judge, and all things supernatural (above/beyond/outside of observable nature, *including, most importantly, the human soul*). Theism and evillusion are irreconcilable opposites;

the Lord and Belial can't be on the same side (2 Cor 6:15). This should be obvious, but millions of professing Christians today are *still* engaged in this woefully-misguided matchmaking. I submit that it's either a matter of failing to think things through—giving the benefit of the doubt—or mere public *profession* of belief in the Creator God, while lacking a *true faith* in Him. One simply can't logically hold to both theism-creation *and* antitheism-evolution. One could do it if one were *schizophrenic*, I suppose, but for those of us with one sane mind in one body, it just can't be made to work.

**Matt 12:25, 30—Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation, and every city or house divided against itself will not stand...He who is not with Me is against Me, and he who does not gather with Me scatters abroad.(NKJV)**

These words of Jesus Christ make it clear: you have to make your choice and stick with it; you can't have it both ways. You can't scatter abroad (with the evillusionists) *and* gather with Christ.

It seems fairly obvious to me that the God who has revealed Himself in His Word is the genuine God with whom we all have to do. He made the worlds and all the rules (**Heb 11:3**). Whereas we offer the opinions of feeble, finite minds, God—infinately intelligent—pronounces unassailable facts. **God has no opinions, just facts.** Let that sink in, and let that thought never leave your mind again. Whatever the eternal and omniscient (all-knowing) One says was, is, or will be ...well, that's entirely factual, truthful information, and that's where our science (literally, “knowledge”) and thinking on all subjects must begin (**Psa 111:10; Prov 1:7, 9:10**). To begin anywhere else is hopelessly foolish.

So let's further explain the assertion that “not thinking things through” is the only possible reason for anyone who's *not* consciously opposed to God to embrace evolutionary thinking. Our route to the truth on this score will be a direct one: as we always should do, we'll go to God's spoken and written *facts* as re-corded in His inerrant and infallible (error-free) Holy Bible. To the Law and to

the Testimony we will go, and whatever doesn't accord with God's perfect Word will be exposed as illusory fantasy (**Isa 8:20**). Here's what God has stated as fact:

**In the beginning God created the heavens [note the plural] and the earth—Gen 1:1**

**For *in* [not in the original text] six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, and rested the seventh day—Ex 20:11**

A few details should be noted and highlighted:

1. The *Beginning* means just that; there was nothing *before* the beginning. “Pre-school” may be a valid term in our language, but “Pre-Beginning” is mental hash. The Beginning of time, space, and matter is the subject here.
2. The *heavens*—in both the very first verse of the Bible and that directly-confirming Exodus 20 verse—is *plural*, so it obviously encompasses more than only earth's atmosphere or God's abode only. Since the Hebrew language has no equivalent for *universe* (Latin) or *cosmos* (Gr. *kosmos*), the idea is expressed by “the heavens...and all that (is) in *them*,” with “them” referring to the heavens (above *and* below the firmament, **Gen 1:7-16**), the earth (landmass), and the sea (oceans, all *sub*-firmament water). Hence, all *within* the heavens means the entirety of *all* creation.

[I find it interesting that every time Carl Sagan declared that the “cosmos is all that there is, ever was, or ever will be,” he unwittingly declared the existence and glory of the Creator-God; Webster's Dictionary defines *cosmos* as “**an orderly harmonious systematic universe—compare CHAOS.**” Compare and contrast indeed! *God's* way is the order-harmony system, and chaos is the ultimate *non*-system]

3. The reading of the original Hebrew is translated into English as “*for six days*”; there is no word to be translated “in” in the text.

This strongly implies that the meaning is, “for a *period of six days*” God’s work of creation went on, as well as *within* six days. In other words, if we say today that Mr. and Mrs. Jones have been married *for* six years, *continuity* for a period of six years is the meaning, and not merely that they were married *in* (within) six years. So for six *consecutive* days did God create, and on the seventh day that immediately followed, He rested in satisfaction with what He’d done: He saw that everything He’d made in those six days was indeed *very good* (**Gen 1:31**).

Here’s some more of what God has stated—as fact—concerning The Creation:

**Psa 33:6, 9**—**By the word of the LORD the heavens** [plural again] **were made, and all the host of them** [everything in the cosmos] **by the breath of His mouth** [He spoke it into existence, as it says in **Gen 1:3-8**]...**For He spoke, and it was done**; [“done” is not there in the original text; the direct translation is, “For He spoke, and it *WAS*” (*period*)] **He commanded, and it stood fast**. [whatever He commanded was instantly executed by virtue of His commanding it, and both the decree/ fiat and the form decreed *stood fast* ; there’s the reason that two atoms could stay together, or adhere/cohere/consist]

Now let’s gather our facts in order to properly think things through. God has made it *factually clear* that He—unaided by any secondary causes—has created all that existed from the very point of The Beginning. By the power of His Word (in the person of Jesus Christ and in what He spoke), God brought into existence *everything* out of *nothing*. Again, *on His own* ; no co-creators, no eventual, down-the-road creator-evolvers were ever enlisted. Furthermore, it’s *emphasized* in **Gen 2:1-3** (and confirmed elsewhere in Scripture, *e.g.*, **Col 1:16-17**—all things *were created*, *past* tense used twice) that God “finished”/ “ended”/ “rested from” all the work that He “*had done*” (*past* tense here and throughout Scripture). Thus, when God rested on that seventh day from the beginning, all matter had been made; and all succeeding generations of all forms of natural

life would have to be *naturally* produced (by ordinary reproduction, not special creation). For the span of the *preceding six days*, God involved Himself in the work of *The Creation*. Taken together, these Biblical *facts* leave **ZERO room for evolution**. *None!* Consider that God says;

1. In THE Beginning...
  2. He ALONE created...
  3. the WHOLE COSMOS...
  4. over a SIX DAY PERIOD...
  5. and He CEASED CREATING...
- (on the seventh day of time-space-matter)

Okay, theistic evolutionists, the ball's in your court. What part of this exclusive eyewitness testimony by the only One who was there do you not understand or do you reject as untrue? Be careful now, as you attempt to proffer an *opinion* in the face of God's facts. Think with the mind that God gave you.

\* Where do you see any co-creators or creatures given the ability to create *new forms* of their own design, from their own desires? Not mentioned and not implied. They have the ability to naturally reproduce *according to their kind* (**Gen 1:21, 24, 25**), but *within their kind* only; one kind becoming a new and different kind happens only in the imaginations of evillusionists.

\* Where do you see that God either *continued* to create the worlds and all in them (we're not talking about *spiritual* regeneration here—**2 Cor 5:17 & Gal 6:15**, the new creation of men and women in Christ) or that He “outsourced” creative powers to the creatures (as theistic evolution requires)? Not there either.

\* Where is there *any hint whatsoever* that God wanted us to understand “for six days” to mean “for six *ages* or six *million* or six *billion* years” He went on creating? Long ages are not there to be found.

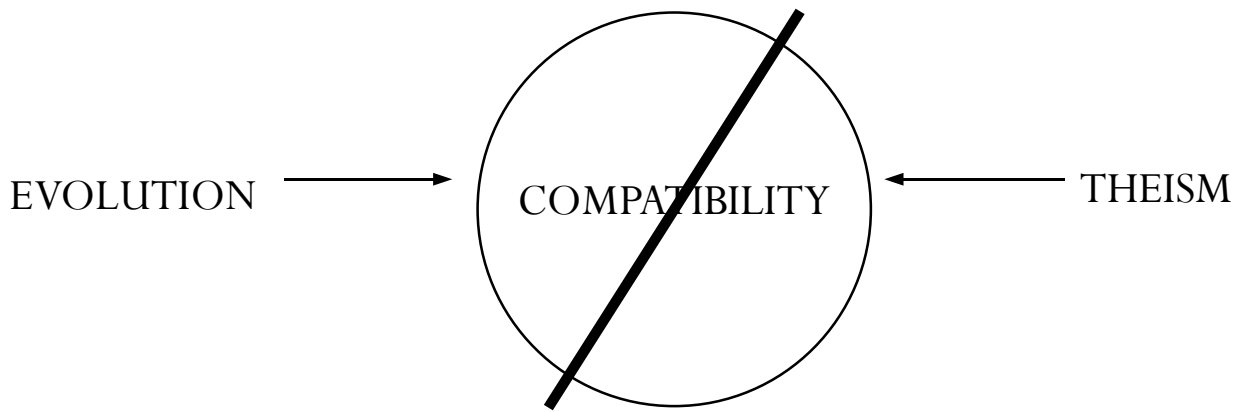
Clearly, the theistic evolutionist is leaning on a broken reed (**2 Kings 18:21, Isa 36:6**). There's just no support for his position. Evolutionary thinking is *non-think*. It's wishing gone wild, desperate dreaming, and specious speculation, a tower of babble built with spittle and spite. People of God, stop insisting on

putting together what God has left asunder! Isn't SCIENCE supposed to be all about sense-driven proven facts? Then why is it that all we get from evillusionists are *vain imaginations* (**Psa 2; Acts 4:25; Rom 1:21; 2 Cor 10:5**) and *evil inventions* and *empty deceits* (**Rom 1:30; Col 2:8**)? That's not science, unless *organized lying* now officially passes for actual science. [What am I *saying*? Of *course* it does! I forgot for a second there how that *defines* modern public "education"—unity in The Lie!]

For anyone who has taken the time to think God's thoughts after Him, there is only one reasonable option: trust *everything* God has said, including what He has said about The Beginning. Here's how reasonable this is: the infinite trumps the finite, the eyewitness trumps the absent blind person, truth trumps lies, and the perfect and holy trumps the unholy one who resents perfection. That's plain, matter-of-fact thinking. We receive at face value the truth of the holy God who has always *been* (there), and who is always truthful (**Num 23:19; 1 Sam 15:29; Titus 1:2; Heb 6:18; the God of truth—Isa 65:16**). For any *Christian*, this should all be second-nature. Often it isn't, sad to say, as history proves too well. But for *anyone anywhere*, as long as you're drawing breath, The Way is still open to you: turn to The Truth and He will set you free (**John 8:32**). That's no mere sound byte or trite expression, that's the magnificent reality of God's grace to us in His universe. Turn out of the way of nihilistic deception, death, and destruction, and towards Christ and *life* on *His* side.

**Prov 14:12—There is a way *that seems* right to a man, but its end is the way of death.**

**Prov 12:15—The way of a fool is right in his own eyes, but he who heeds counsel is wise.** (both NKJV)



BELIEF IN GOD *AND* EVOLUTION CAN NOT CO-EXIST.  
THEISM AND EVOLUTION ARE UTTERLY INCOMPATIBLE.  
WHAT GOD HAS NOT JOINED TOGETHER, LET NOT MAN UNITE.  
(The “other side of the coin” in **Matt 19:6 & Mark 10:9**)

### “THEISTIC EVOLUTION” IS AN IMPOSSIBILITY

No matter how “theistic evolutionists” dress up their teachings with “God-talk,” there is at bottom no God in them; at least not the Biblical, triune God. Here’s a simple proposition: God-followers, by definition, follow God in all things, and that starts with taking Him at His word; no adding, no subtracting, no finessing or refashioning. This is stated clearly and often in God’s Word: **Deut 4:2 & 12:32; Rev 22:18-19; and Prov 30:5-6**, which reads,

**Every word of God is pure/refined/tested; He is a shield to those who put their trust in Him. Do not add to His words, lest He rebuke you, and you be found a liar. (NKJV)**

I have to ask: Do you see any comfort in this passage (or the others cited above) for those who add to or subtract from God’s Pure Word? When people forsake the pure, refined and tested, whole-truth testimony of God—that is, they fail to trust in Him—can they expect Him to continue to be their shield? No, with the absence of trust comes the absence of the shield, and even worse, God will rebuke you as a liar! So, no, we sure can’t see anything good coming from messing around with the pure Word of God.

But of course, this is exactly what theistic evolutionists do, and then they try to dance around the accusation. They'll claim that they *do* take God at His word, but He left out a lot of the details (of creation) that scientists can ably fill in, so why not let those “experts” do their thing? You see, this way God can do His part and reap His glory, and humans can make *their* contributions and get some credit that *they* have coming, too; they can feel good about themselves for making the universe a better and “better- understood” place. Hogwash. What they've really done is this: they've turned their backs on the One who can't lie to them and joined in a group-hug with the Liars Society. What good can ever come from that? That's like folding when you have an unbeatable hand or defecting to the losing, fleeing enemy!

Why do I say theistic evolution is an *impossibility* , and not merely a really stupid idea? I'll answer that in the next few pages with some specifics, points at which evolution and theism are entirely at odds, where there's no chance for any compromise. Utter incompatibility is the rule, and it always will be. That's because God's Word and God, the Author, are immutable; by their very nature and very definition, they *can't* change, since to change from *perfection* to anything less would be contradictory to the unified, holy nature of God and God's Word. God's Word stands—as is—forever:

**Isa 40:8—The grass withers, the flower fades, but the word of our God stands forever. (NKJV)**

Evolutionary thinking, like all so-called science, is just the opposite. Heraclitus (5th Century BC ) was of the opinion that *change* was the only constant in the universe (his exclusion of God was intentional). Well, of course it is, in that kind of imaginary universe! Any universe rooted in chaos—as opposed to constancy—would be *changing* constantly because there's no place to land, no place to rest, no pattern of order whatsoever. This describes science without God, and in turn, this describes the *godless* hypothesis of evolution. Theistic evolutionists, then, are proposing a match between perfect knowledge and order and air-headed, groundless, flitting-about. Godless “science” can't explain “square one.”

## INCOMPATIBILITY LAID OUT IN BLACK & WHITE

### WITH & UNDER GOD—**THEISM** AND CREATION

God alone is self-existing and eternal, so He is necessarily the Creator of all else

God is the source of all living organisms; all life comes from life (*law of biogenesis*)

The Son (of God, & God Himself) created the sun

The Son created **light** on the **first** day of Creation, then the **sun**, three days later

**Genesis 1-11** is historical narrative and is to be taken literally

God's creation took place over a period of six days, just as The Eyewitness has told us in the Bible

God created the original **kinds**, and endowed them with the ability to reproduce "**after their kind**," as well as **speciation** (variability) *within* kinds

### WITHOUT GOD—UNDER **EVOLUTION**

Matter, space, and time self-generated, eternal; everything came into existence by the big bang

Life sprang from non-life (spontaneous generation)

There is no son of "god," but there is a sun

The sun came first, as the ultimate energy source to make life on earth possible

Genesis is irrelevant at best, if not a complete fairy tale

The universe was billions of years in the making, just as earthbound, finite minds have speculated

Plants and animals (including humans) have the ability to transform, over deep time, from one type of organism to one that's entirely different

INCOMPATIBILITY LAID OUT IN BLACK & WHITE  
WITH & UNDER GOD—**THEISM**  
AND CREATION

WITHOUT GOD—UNDER  
**EVOLUTION**

Plants will always reproduce plants (with variations), animals will always reproduce the same kind of animals (with variation), and humans will always reproduce humans - (with genetic variation, too)

God created both “dinosaurs” (land animals) and mankind on the 6th day of the Creation Week (the first week of earth’s history)

Lucifer/Satan fell sometime *after the 6th Day*, since at that point, God pronounced all of creation **“very good”**—**Gen 1:31** (including Lucifer)

Disease, suffering, bloodshed, death, *etc.*—all parts of The Curse—entered into the world through the sin of Adam, as the representative of all mankind

God specially-created Adam & Eve, the first humans

ALL life has “evolved” from the first living, “simple” cell; the single evolutionary “tree of life” is the anchoring point of all living things, so they all share a **COMMON ANCESTOR**

Dinosaurs went extinct millions of years before humans arrived; they never lived together; “prehistoric times” stretch back billions of years

Lucifer/Satan is either entirely mythical, or the rebellion he led resulted in the wiping out of the “first creation” of Gen 1:1, long before Gen 1:2

There’s no such thing as “sin” and there were no such persons as the “Adam” or “Eve” of the bible; there’s no right or wrong, only matter

The first full-humans evolved from near-humans

INCOMPATIBILITY LAID OUT IN BLACK & WHITE  
WITH & UNDER GOD—**THEISM**  
AND **CREATION**

WITHOUT GOD—UNDER  
**EVOLUTION**

Just as God created Eve to be a valuable companion for Adam, He also created many **sybiotic relationships** between plants and insects, birds and animals, fishes and other sea-life, *etc.*, all of which require that relationship to be **in place from the start for either party to survive**

God designed reproductive systems and encoded the various methods into all living creatures

God programmed all of the complexities of the cell

God does everything for and with a purpose, and His creation expresses **teleology** (means directed towards an end)

God is incapable of making mistakes (infallibility)

The Bible describes a worldwide, ultra-destructive flood that drastically reshaped the earth, during which billions of living creatures perished

Just as creatures added new body parts and mechanisms to enhance their own reproductive and survival abilities, they “figured out” that certain mutual-support systems could be beneficial to two or more creature-types; they then came to an agreement and thus proceeded (just so!)

All of the various life-forms evolved their own organs, systems, and methods

The simple cell complexified itself without a plan

“Purpose” is a meaningless, invented concept; it doesn’t exist in our chance universe, so random mutations drive all “upward” change

Evolution depends on billions of genetic errors

The bible is wrong. All historical floods have been local affairs, with many being tranquil, thus having very little effect of any sort

INCOMPATIBILITY LAID OUT IN BLACK & WHITE  
WITH & UNDER GOD—**THEISM**  
AND CREATION

INCOMPATIBILITY LAID OUT IN BLACK & WHITE  
WITHOUT GOD—UNDER  
**EVOLUTION**

The account of The Flood in Noah's day—**Gen 6-9** and confirmed in other passages—is totally trustworthy and accurate

Humans alone are made in the image of God: having a similar derived intelligence, moral-sense/conscience, powers of intelligible speech, and an invisible soul that lives on forevermore after being separated from the body at all death

The triune God—as described in the Bible—is the Creator of all things, as well as the Sustainer-King of all forever. He's never had help from co-creators; His plan is unalterable; He is perfect in all His ways, and He's never been less than perfect. He alone knows all things past, present, and future (to us), since He lives outside, over, and above time, in the eternal "present"

The human writers of "Genesis" stole from various flood legends that dotted the ancient *globe* [*their* word]; none of them are true, all are fables

All of that is fantasy: no "god"; no "image of god"; humans evolved, they weren't specially-made; intelligence, speech, *etc.* are all the result of natural, chemical processes; there's no "soul"; death is the natural end of things

The cosmos is all that ever was, is, or will be. If anything can be rightly said to govern this totally material universe, it must be "chance" (we're a bit confused on how *non*-material chance can do that, but that's our story). The bed-rock "doctrine" of evolution is that "god" has no part in *our* universe. All-things "supernatural" or non-material are excluded by default (oh,...except chance!)

Before we finish this introductory chapter, let's backtrack a bit and pick up a loose end or two. When I describe the God-opposers as “mad” and “vehement” and “desperate” and “hateful” *etc.*, I'm making observations through the magnifying lens of Scripture. Only God can see into the human heart (**Gen 6:5; 1 Sam 16:7; Jer 17:9**), and I fully realize and *appreciate* that! So the best I can do is to take God's word for truth in that regard, just as in every other case. We could fill dozens of pages in this book with what God has seen and related to us when *He* looks into the heart of a dedicated enemy. What I'm driving at is simply this: certainly, not every God-opposer is publicly loud, blatant, obnoxious and wickedly mean in his or her determined opposition to God. We all know atheists, agnostics, evolutionists, and so forth, who seem to be fairly nice individuals; they don't parade their hate, and we might have a hard time believing that they live in opposition to God at all. Maybe they just haven't given God, the supernatural, and the afterlife much thought, and they just want to take the path of least resistance in *this* life. Maybe, but I doubt it. I'm a firm believer in what God has said through His inspired servant, the apostle Paul:

**Rom 1:20, 28—For since the creation of the world His invisible *attributes* are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead/ divine nature/ deity, so that they are WITHOUT EXCUSE... And even as they did not like to retain God in *their* knowledge, GOD GAVE THEM OVER to a debased mind, to do those things which are not fitting (NKJV)**

There's no reason to doubt what God says through Paul in these verses; *between* verses 20 and 28; and in **verses 29-32**. It gets real ugly, this God's-eye examination of the heart set in opposition to Him. It's a veritable checklist of demonic behavior and machinations. It's all there, and we humans might only see a smattering of it come into the open (by *design* of the opposition). But if anyone wants to test the spirits, try backing one of these people into an intellectual corner. Rub the raw nerve with persistence and see what happens next. The kind of reaction you encounter will vary from person to person, of course, but God has warned us about the *type* through a general personality profile in Romans 1:

**futile in their thoughts...darkened foolish hearts...profess to be wise, but are fools...reject God in favor of any idol ...uncleanness, lust, homosexuality, vile passions...filled with unrighteousness, sexual immorality, wickedness, covetousness, greed, malice, envy, murder, strife, deceit, evil-mindedness...backbiters, HATERS OF GOD, violent, proud, boasters, INVENTORS OF EVIL, disobedient to parents, UNDISCERNING, UNTRUSTWORTHY, UN-LOVING, UNFORGIVING, UNMERCIFUL...**

**Who, knowing the righteous judgment of God, that those who practice such things are deserving of death, not only do the same but also approve of those who practice them (Rom 1:32, NKJV)**

This is what *we* don't see, except when we simply judge the trees by their fruit, as Jesus advised us to do (**Matt 7 & Luke 6**). But look at that list above. Do you really want to run with this pack? They hate God and every well-behaved person. They go out of their way to *invent* evil. They can't discern the truth from the false, *can't be trusted*, can't show genuine love, forgiveness, and mercy. But misleading others into sharing their damnation? That they can do. Knowing better, they still *approve* and prod.

They'll say, "Go ahead, that [behavior] won't hurt anyone. There's nothing wrong with that!" The point is that God has reported to us what's inside such people, so to be forewarned is to be fore-armed. God is the only infallible judge of character, so we'd better listen to Him instead of relying on our severely-limited powers of instinct and perception. We're all fools for a smile or a line like, "Hey, we're all in this together." That kind of superficial stuff goes a long way with most of us because we, too, are *undiscerning*. But never forget that next word above: UNTRUSTWORTHY. Actually, that's all we really need to know about God-opposing evillusionists. To place any trust in the untrustworthy is suicidal (on *many* levels). Evillusionists are joined to idols, let 'em alone; their drink is rebellion (**Hos 4:17-18**). From such people turn away! (**2 Tim 3:5**).

The bottom line is this: even if you haven't yet encountered hostility directed at *you* personally from a committed evolutionist, always remember that *openly* lashing out at you would be counter-productive. If you're scared off, you're out of reach; you can't be pulled down, too. Why tip the hand and scatter the prey? Also, God knows better than you ever will just where a person is "at." If he/she is an object of God's saving grace, that person will be turned from lies and saved for eternity. But if not...be careful; be careful that you don't get sucked down into the pit, too. Most importantly, never forget that God-opposers—one and all—are in a state of rebellion against the true Creator-God-Redeemer that *you claim* to revere and love. Ultimately, their "problem" is not with you as much as it is with Him; not by a *long* shot. Again, human beings aren't the real targets. Taking God down from His throne is the primary pipedream of every atheist, anti-theist, and evillusionist. It will never go beyond the dream to realization, but that's the essence of the evolutionist's rebellion: get God out of *our* universe! Their petty fist-shaking might be funny if the stakes weren't so high, so we should pity 'em and pray for 'em, but never join 'em.

Finally, our Commander has put both an order and the means of carrying it out in two passages from the Old Testament. The first—the order—can be found in **Isa 57:20-21 & 58:1**, which reads:

**But the wicked are like the storm-tossed sea, for it cannot be still, and its waters churn up mire and muck. There is no peace for the wicked, says my God. Cry out loudly, don't hold back! Raise your voice like a trumpet. (HCSB)  
Cry aloud, spare not!—NKJV)**

Notice here, too, that God sees the wicked for what they are, and He confirms their destiny: **no peace!** Then we (all who would be faithful to God) are told to *not* hold back from calling attention to the vast difference between the constant restlessness of the wicked—those whom God has given over to their own desire to distance themselves from Him—and the state of resolution and peace that belongs to God's faithful. A big part of our *crying loudly* and *not holding back* is that two-pronged strategy advised in **Prov 26:4-5**.

Remember that simple two-step?

Step 1: DON'T BUY INTO THEIR SCHEMES, DEFINITIONS, OR CHOICE OF BATTLEFIELDS; THERE IS NO "NEUTRAL GROUND" IN THIS WAR. DON'T LAY DOWN!

Step 2: DON'T HOLD BACK, BUT SHOW THEM EVERY ABSURDITY THAT FOLLOWS IF WE WERE TO ACCEPT THEIR ASSUMPTIONS AND CONCLUSIONS AS FACTS.

Reader, you might think I sound like a broken record,...or...maybe we should update that to a *skipping CD*, but this is extremely important. We're talking about souls continuing on for *infinity* in either perfect peace and happiness or misery with *no hope* of reprieve. The evil illusion of evolution will never carry any person towards truth, life, peace, and joy. It can only offer lies, confusion, misery, and death; and it *delivers* !

"Theistic" Evolutionists, are you aware of how you're seen through the lenses of committed evolutionists? V.I. Lenin had the perfect term: **"Useful Idiots."** It doesn't give me any special pleasure to have to break it to you, but there it is, unvarnished and in the open. Evillusionists don't respect you for sacrificing truth in order to buddy-up to them. Rather, you've made yourselves traitors to the Truth *and* the camp's laughingstocks and royal pot-boys or court jesters. And this is how your "*friends*" see you, truth be told. Here are two typical reactions to/characterizations of theistic evolutionists from hard-core evolutionists:

Jacques Monod, 1976: *Selection is the blindest and most cruel way of evolving new species...more cruel because it is a process of elimination, of destruction. The struggle for life and elimination of the weakest is a horrible process, against which our whole modern ethics revolts...I am surprised that a Christian would defend the idea that this is the process which God more or less set up in order to have evolution.*

Richard Dawkins (on the suggestion that God could have used evolution to create): *I think that's a tremendous cop-out. If God wanted to create life and create humans, it would be slightly odd that he should choose the extraordinarily roundabout way of waiting for 10 billion years before life got started and then waiting for another 4 billion years until you got human beings capable of worshipping and sinning and all the other things that religious people are interested in.*

Maybe you think I just “cherry-picked” a couple of quotes that seemed to support my thesis of utter incompatibility between belief in God and evolution. Maybe you think they aren't so representative after all. Okay, here are three more, and these three speakers won't be so polite as Monod and Dawkins tried to be. These three hard-core atheists pulled no punches.

Julian Huxley: *It is clear that the doctrine of evolution is **directly antagonistic** to that of Creation...Evolution, if consistently accepted, makes it **impossible to believe the Bible.***

[Note well: the leading evolutionist of his day, the grandson of T.H. Huxley (“Darwin's Bulldog”), said that evolution is directly opposed to creation and wipes out the possibility of still believing the Bible; in other words, what theistic evolutionists desire—to have their cake and eat it, too—is impossible.]

G. Richard Bozarth, *American Atheist* magazine, 1979: *Christianity has fought, still fights, and will continue to fight science to the desperate end over evolution, because evolution destroys utterly and finally the very reason Jesus' earthly life was supposedly made necessary. Destroy Adam and Eve and the original sin, and in the rubble you will find the sorry remains of the Son of God. If Jesus was not the redeemer who died for our sins, and **this is what evolution means, then Christianity is nothing.***

[Is there any mistaking his meaning or doubting of his credentials as a card-carrying God-opposer?! Notice, too, that he doesn't put evolution in place as a *substitute* god, but credits it as the *destroyer* of God.]

Frank Zindler, of *The American Atheist* magazine, 1996: *The most devastating thing (though) that biology did to Christianity was the discovery of biological evolution. Now that we know that Adam and Eve never were real people, the **central myth of Christianity is destroyed**. If there never was an Adam and Eve, there never was an original sin. If there never was an original sin, there is no need of salvation. If there is no need of salvation, there is no need of a Savior. And I submit **that puts Jesus, historical or otherwise, into the ranks of the unemployed. I think that evolution is absolutely the death knell of Christianity.***

[Huxley and Zindler quotes are taken from *Solving Bible Mysteries*, by D. James Kennedy, p. 102-103; Bozarth quote found on the *Answers In Genesis Creation* CD-ROM; see Bibliography for more info.]

Is it not fairly obvious that God and His believers are not welcome in evillusionary circles? Except to be *used*, that is. Recall how Richard Lewontin put it, “...*materialism is absolute, for we cannot allow a Divine foot in the door.*” So “theistic evolutionists” are condemned to traipse back and forth, looking for friendly faces in both warring camps, and finding few who’ll tolerate their nonsense. Traitors to the God in whom they profess to believe, they find that their true loyalties lie with His sworn enemies, and *they* will only take advantage of these dupes, these *useful idiots*.

In one last effort to show just how horribly misguided and how easily abused theistic evolutionists are, here is a chilling quote from “Hitler’s Hangman,” Adolf Eichmann. The context: *he* was to be hanged the next day for having the blood of over five million Jews on his hands, and a British chaplain had asked him if he’d like to confess before he met his Maker; Eichmann insisted that he’d done “only right!” and when asked to explain that extraordinary statement he replied,

*Certainly I will. Both the churches in Germany, the Catholic and the Pro-testant, believe in **Theistic Evolution**. Both of them believe that God’s method of creation was to wipe out the handicapped and to wipe out the less fitted. And as the Jews are less fitted*

*than our people, I have only helped God in his methods. I have only catalyzed God's way of working. And when I meet God I shall tell him so. (Marvin L. Lubenow, Bones of Contention, p. 152-153)*

Unquestionably, Eichmann, Hitler, and the other Nazi leaders were despicable mass-murderers, and to most of us, they all appear to have been clinically insane. But that's where it gets *real* scary, because if we were to connect the dots from their evolutionary worldview base to their horrendous actions, we would find that their *logic* —if-then propositions—was in order. Their actions logically followed from their starting assumptions, which were that there was not a *singular* race of humans, as the Bible proclaims (**Gen 1&2, 9-11, Acts 17:26**), but *multiple races*, and that certain races hadn't evolved as successfully as others. Such "inferior" races had to go, as well as all "useless eaters" who were nothing but a drain on scarce resources ("the handicapped" and "less fitted"). I, for one, won't put up with any evolutionist who whines that not all evolutionists are mass-murdering Nazis, so we should lay off that connection. And here's why: right around 100% of the Nazis were *evillusionists*, that's why! Evolution shaped all of their thinking and practice, as has been well-documented. The glove fits; you *can't* acquit!

Professing Christians, let these straightforward words from Lubenow sink in, and then we can ease our way back to higher ground and reality in our benevolent Creator's universe:

*In the real world, it is impossible for two opposite concepts to both be true at the same time. We cannot have evolved from a chimpanzeelike transitional form and at the same time have been created by God in his image. One concept or the other is obviously false. (Bones, p. 306)*

[If this is now clear, I'm content to put the bludgeon away; no more admonishments or cajoling for now.]

*To live in reality is to recognize the creation of the universe by God, the creation of humans in his image, the entrance of sin into the world through Satan, the death of Christ on the cross as our substitute and as payment for our sins, the triumph of Christ over death by his resurrection from the dead, the availability of eternal life to all who will trust in Christ as their Savior, and the certainty that those who will not do so must pay for their own sins—a horrible and totally unnecessary fate. Reality is recognizing that there is no way we can escape our responsibility to God.*

*Welcome to reality! (Bones, p. 297)*

With that said, we'll end this introductory chapter on a high note. Remember that the truth, like The Truth—Jesus Christ—is both *available and unassailable*. Both the truth and The Truth (**Titus 1:2, John 14:6**) are as near as the Word of God (see **Deut 30:14 & Rom 10:8**). And, unlike the grass that withers and the flower that fades,

**The word of our God stands forever! (Isa 40:8)**

Unassailable, unconquerable, uncompromising, and uncompromisable, that's our God, and that's His inspired, inerrant, and infallible written Word. He holds the vantage ground of truth forever, and by His grace, we can stand upon it as well!

## CLEAR-CUT TRUTH

Fast forward a century or two (in your *mind*, since time-machines aren't yet readily available for consumer use). In this future scenario, are you envisioning a Star Wars bar scene universe where hardly any life form is recognizable? In other words, are you riding someone else's imagination into future eras, times in which it's all about "outer space" and civilizations beyond our own boring earthbound ones? Or maybe you're a bit more down-to-earth and tend to think that what happens on this plane will still be of interest to its inhabitants *and ...to* its Creator, a providential God who hasn't abandoned His *special* project, which would be *us*—humans uniquely made in His image. *That's* the future as I see it.

You know what else I see in not-far-away decades? I see *truly* wise scientists, educators, clergy, and common folks like us laughing at deluded generations like ours, shaking their heads in amazement that such a fairy tale as *goo-to-you-via-the-zoo* evolution could have ever gained any traction at all, much less rule the age for so long. [that great expression originated, if I'm not mistaken, with Dr. Jonathan Sarfati] Some of the more charitable souls, I imagine, would be more inclined to pity us and intone, "Yes, but there except for the grace of God go I" or whatever form that expression takes on years down the road. Of such futuristic charitable ones I say, "God bless 'em, everyone."

But right at the outset, let's dispense with the usual irresponsibly-recycled garbage: **evolution is not a fact**, not even close. The primary propagandist of evolutionary "theory" (weak hypothesis is much more accurate), Charles Darwin, entitled his attack on God and reality, *On The Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection, or the Preservation of Favoured Races in the Struggle for Life* . We'll spotlight the much-ignored racist aspects in both that title and Darwin's body of work in another place, but for now, focus on those first few words, the words that stick in everybody's minds: *On The Origin of Species*. It tends to make one think that—above all else—how the species *originated* would be the *main subject of the lengthy*

book, right? Well, one would be *wrong* to assume that, as the author—in 490 pages—never got around to the subject of “The Origin.” Here’s what mathematician Peter T. Saunders observed about this odd circumstance:

*Samuel Butler’s (1911) complaint that Darwin had given us ‘an Origin of the Species with the Origin cut out’ is true today as when he wrote it. (The Illustrated ORIGINS Answer Book, p.85)*

“Must’ve slipped his mind” would be an inaccurate suggestion, since the truth is that he didn’t have a clue *in* his mind about how life of any kind could’ve gotten started without God. Conscience told him, like everyone else, that God was the Grand Originator. It’s just that Darwin couldn’t deal with that truth, so he dedicated his life to making God out to be the ultimate liar. He developed a chip on his shoulder that constantly grew. Marvin Lubenow again has hit the nail on the head:

*Darwin’s purpose was to “ungod” the universe. (Bones of Contention, p. 94)*

To this day, evillusionists of all persuasions—Darwinian, neo-Darwinian, non-Darwinian—can’t explain how Living Cell #1 came about. The *best* (!?) they can offer are life-forming (though inanimate) crystals or clay, or ...just maybe life was *seeded* here by intelligent life forms from *another* world? Yeah, that’s it! *Directed panspermia* is what we’ll call it, said Francis Crick and Leslie Orgel, and with a fancy-shmancy scientific name like that, everybody will think they’re stupid to *not* believe it. That’ll shoot the problem into “outer space,” where nobody can get near it again, and we evolutionists will all be off the hook!

[Note: Crick’s agnosticism writ large crippled his science; it’s astonishing to me, the lengths to which he’s gone to displace God from His universe, especially since he was a co-discoverer of the jaw-dropping ingenuity, complexity, and sub-microscopic intricacy found in DNA’s double-helix structure; now *that’s* willful ignorance, and what more proof does any God-fearer need that *not* fearing God is not

the way to gain true, essential knowledge? remember: **Psa 111:10, Prov 1:7, 9:10.]**

Back to Darwin, though, and his blundering blunderbuss with which he attempted to blow away God. While that assassination could never succeed, too many millions since 1859 have convinced themselves—against conscience—that he *did* succeed in at least putting the fear of ...well,...*man*...into God, so that He hasn't been hanging around these parts ever since (evidently, Nietzsche finished Him off in 1882, the year his decline into full-on insanity began, and the year Darwin met his Maker). So these millions of minions continue to carry their hero on their never-fatiguing shoulders because it's the least they could do! Even neo-Darwinian and *non*-Darwinian evolutionists blithely dismiss his many errors, lapses, and off-the-mark predictions. They'll maybe wink at these failings, shrug, and say, "Well, no harm done anyway." A few are more honest about the failings and damage of Darwin and Darwinism, as revealing quotes, some of which are included in the last chapter, will show. But for the most part, he's still the wise, grandfatherly ol' Saint Charles, who—even if he didn't get it all right—always meant well and never did any real harm: Hey, why don't we name more than just an Australian city after this god of a man? A state? Province? Or a *country*, maybe? *Now* you're talkin'!

Well, suffice it to say, God sees it another way. And since even Darwin has had experiential, first-hand knowledge of God's existence and sovereignty over all creation since he appeared before The Judge (he surely is aware now and forevermore that God indeed is the Creator), let's turn to God's perfect Word for the *real* story of how everything got started.

Since God is the only One who was there, He doesn't have to bother with fanciful guesswork. He's the only qualified expert eyewitness, so if we want the truth of what happened, we have only to receive His testimony. Providentially enough, He's put that testimony in written form through Moses. Here are the two clearest Old Testament pronouncements of *fact* regarding the outset of God's created earth-system order (*universe*, as most would put it) and all within it:

**Gen 1:1—In the beginning, God created the heavens and the earth;**

**Ex 20:11—For in six days Jehovah made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all which is in them, and He rested on the seventh day; (both LIT)**

Straightforward, isn't it? Direct, precise, sealed, not evasive, not obscure, no gate left wide open. *Six-day* creation is spelled out verse-by-verse as the historical narrative develops in **Gen 1:2-2:3**. You've probably heard both self-described Bible-believers *and* Bible-skeptics contending for different meanings for the word translated "day" in verses 5, 8, 13, 14, 16, 18, 19, 23, and 31 of chapter 1, as well as verses 2 and 3 of chapter 2. This becomes necessary only when one has an agenda to push that's in conflict with the truth as rendered. The plain fact of the matter is that ordinary days, each of about 24 hours in length, are *clearly indicated* in a number of ways, and this meaning sits right at the surface of the text for any unbiased reader. Let's take a look.

The same Hebrew word, *yom* (Str. 3117) is used in each of those verses cited above, so it should come as no surprise that the intended meaning in each of those occurrences is consistent: a day in verse 5 is a day in verse 8 is a day in verse 13 and so on. Right? Well, I'm not about to walk into the trap of asserting that *every* Old Testament usage of *yom*, Str. 3117 means exactly the same thing, because one verse beyond the section we have under the microscope contains *yom*, #3117, and that verse reads as follows;

**Gen 2:4—These are the births of the heavens and of the earth when they were created in the day [*yom*, 3117] that Jehovah was making earth and heavens (LIT)**

Gotcha! say the gap-theorists and days-into-eons-stretching eisegetes (those who read *into* the Scriptures, as opposed to exegetes who are careful to *draw out* only what's actually there in the text and context — a *very* important distinction). Got me, eh? First, remember who has pointed this out, and I did so to head off a well-known, well-worn objection: that *in the day* "contradicts" this

six-days business. The argument is: which is it, in six days or in the (one, singular) day? And furthermore, they demand, who says that this day in which Jehovah created was a day of specified, determinate length? Why couldn't that day of creation last for thousands or millions of years?

In answer to the who-says question, you already know the answer: *God*; **God says** the length of time He took to create the heavens and the earth, the seas, and all things in them was six days (**Ex 20:11**, in reinforcing the narrative in **Gen. 1:2-2:3**). To borrow the expression, it's six in one place and a half-dozen in the other; 6=6. So what's the problem? I'll grant that "in the day that" in **Gen 2:4** calls for a different meaning than all of the preceding usages of the same Hebrew word. If all those occurrences meant literal days of about 24 hours each—the simple, intuitive, first-thought reading for any human being familiar with life on planet earth—the same meaning obviously can't be applied to **Gen 2:4**; it would be nonsensical double-talk. But what speaker of English has never used the same word to convey different meanings, depending on the *context* in which it's used? A few examples will suffice: in my day; back in the day; daylight hours; work day; day off (the whole day hasn't gone missing from the calendar, it's just that you have no scheduled work hours on that day of the week); day of destiny; every dog has his day, *etc.* So how about the following commonsense translation for the verse in question?

**Gen 2:4 (HCSB) —These are the records of the heavens and the earth, concerning their creation at the time that the LORD God made the earth and the heavens.**

*...at the time that the LORD God made the earth and the heavens.*

See how *at the time that* easily equates to *in the day that*? It's just common sense. Because in our day...well,...there you go! When we say, "Back in Moses' day...", we're not talking about a specific day in roughly 1500 BC, but about the general period of time in which he lived and acted in history. When a

specific event—in this case, when “the LORD God made the earth and the heavens”—is the subject, that event is bracketed or bounded by a start and finish of the “day” or “time” (“the day” was a period of time that started with the first day and ended with the sixth). Simple enough?

But there are other solid, exegetical reasons—working *with* the text as we find it—for understanding those six days of the creation week as literal, ordinary days. First of all, a simple fact of Hebrew usage in our OT is that whenever the word *yom* is used *with a descriptive number* (a number is attached to it, modifying it), *yom* means a literal, ordinary day, just as we most commonly understand it to be. The *first* day; the *second* day; through the *sixth* day; each a day of 24 hours. Even that *seventh* day on which God rested from His work of creation (**Gen 2:3**) ? Yep! It’s not like He was tired—He wasn’t any worse for wear after only making *everything* in less than a week, a mighty scary thought when the mind encounters it (**The Creator of the ends of the earth neither faints or is weary—Isa 40:28**). Instead, He took that literal day of about 24 hours to rest to *set the example* for His human creatures that *are* subject to weariness:

**Ex 20:8-11 (HCSB)—8 Remember to dedicate the Sabbath day: 9 You are to labor six days and do all your work, 10 but the seventh day is a Sabbath to the LORD your God. You must not do any work—you, your son or daughter, your male or female slave, your livestock, or the foreigner within your gates. 11 For the LORD made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and everything in them in six days; then He rested on the seventh day. Therefore the LORD blessed the Sabbath day and declared it holy.**

Once again, this is *very* clear. Notice the progression:

- 1) labor/work *six days* only
- 2) the *seventh day* is not a work-day; it’s dedicated to the LORD God as a day of rest
- 3) *FOR* (because)...the LORD made everything in *six days*, but...
- 4) *Then* (that very next day) He rested on the *seventh day* (that

- followed right on the heels of the six-day work-week)
- 5) **THEREFORE** the LORD blessed the Sabbath day (set it aside as a special day) and declared it holy (as only the holy God can)

**RIGHT HERE, WE HAVE GOD’S OWN COMMENTARY! THESE WORDS ARE LITERALLY SET IN STONE, AS THE FINGERS OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST ENGRAVED THEM ON THE STONE TABLETS OF THE COVENANT—**

**Ex 31:18 (NKJV)—And when He had made an end of speaking with him on Mount Sinai, He gave Moses two tablets of the Testimony, tablets of stone, written with the finger of God.**

The fact that this action was performed *specifically* by the Second Person of the Trinity is proved in several places in Scripture, most notably **Col 1:15, 19—“He is the image of the invisible God...For it pleased the Father that in Him all the fulness should dwell”**; **Col 2:9—For in Him dwells all the fulness of the Godhead bodily**; and **Ex 33:11-23**, where we read that **“the LORD spoke to Moses face to face, as a man speaks to his friend”** and that **“no man shall see Me [God in His unfiltered full glory] and live”** (verse 20). Yet Moses *was* allowed to *see* the “back” of God only because the *Son of God* sheltered him in a rock *cleft* (split) with *His hand*, and then used *His hand* to shield Moses from the blast of holy glory that God permitted him to personally experience (verses 21-23). This was a magnificently gracious act of *mediation* that *only Christ* could perform. It’s the “Rock of Ages” incident that moved Augustus Toplady to write the hymn by that name.

But here’s the clincher: **Ex 34:1**—it could just as easily have been Ex 33:24, since it’s the very next verse in the original Hebrew text—reads, **“And the LORD said to Moses, ‘Cut two tablets of stone like the first ones, and I will write on these tablets the words that were on the first tablets which you broke.’”** (NKJV) So in the same context, **The Word of John 1** *again* engraves **The Ten Words**, or *decalogue* (Gr. *dekalogos*, as it is in

**Deut 10:4**). Since The Father and The Holy Spirit are Spirit *only*, only The Son could have had a rock-splitting hand and a tablet-inscribing finger. Clearly, it was the pre-incarnate Christ who performed these physical actions. Any efforts to chalk these up to anthropomorphic expressions (describing God’s invisible-spiritual attributes in physical terms better suited to human understanding) will “prove too much.” Didn’t a real, physical Jesus of Nazareth write with His real finger on the ground (**John 8:6-8**)? When Jesus told Thomas to look at His hands (**John 20:27**), did Thomas not see them? It was the sight of Christ’s wounds—hands and side—that convinced Thomas (verses 28-29) that He was in fact the same Lord Jesus Christ with whom he’d spent the better part of the previous three years! And when John leaned/reclined on the bosom/breast of Jesus—**John 13:23 & 21:20**—how is that to be understood anthropomorphically? Or in a purely spiritual fashion, for that matter?

No, there’s no getting around the fact that the New Testament Christ is manifested in the OT theophanies (visible appearances of God), of which **Ex 33-34** is but one example (see also Joshua’s encounter in **Josh 5:13-15**: a *Man with sword in hand* accepts worship from Joshua; this could only be the pre-incarnate Christ; **Gen 18**: Abraham “bargains” with God, face-to-face— “**Abraham still stood before the LORD**” (verse 22) and “**The LORD said**” (verse 26) and “**the LORD went His way as soon as He had finished speaking with Abraham**” (verse 33). The LORD speaking to men face-to-face *and* accepting their worship? Unmistakably, only Christ fits the bill. Christ, the unique God-man, inscribed the Ten Commandments Himself, so He’s quite familiar with their content and true meaning, thank you!

I have to say, anyone who doesn’t have an agenda of his/her own can’t help but recognize the direct links between God’s pattern of six days of work and one day of rest in the Creation Week and the same pattern *therefore* set for creatures made in His image. Remember, God needed no rest, but we do. Jesus explained this in **Mark 2:27**:

**Then He told them, “The Sabbath was made for man and not man for the Sabbath.”** (HCSB)

Here again you have The Word (**John 1:1**) confirming the written Word of God as indeed having the meaning we've drawn from it. That is, the one-to-one correspondence that we thought we saw is actually there. God rested after six days of work in order to show humans that they should—and need to—do the same. Even a “week” of six *years* of work and a *year* of complete rest already makes for some serious practical difficulties in a human life—if that formula is suggested—let alone the sheer *impossibility* of a career of six *thousand* years of work before a *thousand* years of rest (and then repeat, I'm guessing?). What about Adam? God says that He made him on the *sixth* day; did he not make it through even *one* day? If a day=1000 years or a million years or whatever other nonsense one wishes to inject into God's perfect texts, there's no end to the “possible” meanings, and therefore, no *possible* way to decide on a particular meaning, to truly understand the words written for our benefit.

Much more exegetical proof is available. We'll continue to take the text as we find it and draw the appropriate conclusions. The next piece of evidence for six-day creation is easy to grasp: throughout **Gen 1:2-2:3**, the expression, “the evening and the morning were...” *brackets each day* described in the text. This is solid evidence in support of interpreting the words translated as “day” in the passage as normally-understood days, wherein are seen both the morning and the evening, both parts of the same 24-hour day. Consider this fact: if we were to understand any of these days to be long periods of time—thousands or millions of years—*nobody ...ever* would experience both the morning and the evening of that “day!” Nobody has even lived a thousand years (although Methuselah sure had a good run at it), so nobody in the whole history of humanity has ever lived through a day of that description! Yet we know that Adam lived through that day in which/on which he was created; *within* the evening and the morning of a literal, 24-hour day *in* history was the day *on* which the first human being was created. Adam, as a matter of fact, did *not* fail to live even *one* day—by the Scripture-twisting definition of day/age theorists—but went on to live 930 years (composed of normal, ordinary days), *according to God*:

**Gen 5:5 (NKJV)—So all the days that Adam lived were nine hundred and thirty years; and he died.**

Could *this* have been stated more plainly? If you think so, your complaint must be lodged with The Author, not with me. Here's what I think this text says: Adam lived to be 930 years old before he died. And here's what I *don't* see in this text: Adam lived to be 930 x 365 x 1000 years old (339,450,000, if my math is correct). Am I stretching the point? Not at all. When it's proposed that the days mentioned in **Genesis 1:2-2:3** are anything other than ordinary days, some real mathematical difficulties—*impossibilities*—arise. If each day in that context is *correctly* understood to be a thousand years, then a *year* of those days would be 365,000 years, and 930 of those years would translate to over 339 *million* years!

Look at **Gen 5:5** once more: both terms, *days and years* are used in the same sentence, and the definition of the latter is *determined by* the former (years of days); you can't switch definitions around in mid-sentence, or else you speak sheer nonsense. No *communication* results between parties—speaker/writer and listener/reader—when meanings are confused and left hanging in midair. In this particular case, the reader would be left to wonder, “Now when you say *years*, is that year-years or your own re-definition of years, like a year's worth of day-years, or 365 times your day-years, which would mean—if I follow you—365,000 times what I conceive to be—as well as everyone I know—a regular year?” [Makes your head spin, doesn't it? It makes *so* much more sense to let God tell us the story His way.]

Reader, God is not the author of confusion (**1 Cor 14:33**). He knows the truth, and He knows quite well how to communicate it. He needs no help from mental pipsqueaks like us to explain what He meant to say. Look at how clear He made this whole business, the exact length of the Creation Week:

1. He numbered the days for us; the Hebrew locks us into the literal, six-day interpretation by virtue of the fact that “day” in conjunction with a modifying number always means an ordinary day (no exceptions throughout the OT)
2. He used the terms “the evening and the morning” to book-end each ordinary day of creation
3. He made His definition of “day” as used in **Gen 1:2-2:3** *very clear* in **Ex 20:11 and 31:15-17**

There's just no other way to understand this text. God has sealed off any other interpretations as unreasonable and unscriptural. To continue to try to cram thousands or millions or billions of years into a space defined by God as *days* is wrongheaded, futile, and even blasphemous, because God has made it clear: **in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth.**

Another quote from the text of *Did God Create in 6 Days?* will fit well here. This time, we'll benefit from the words of Benjamin Shaw on page 217:

*...the organization of the material in Genesis 1, especially the recounting of the days with their enumeration and their cycling of evening and morning, **shuts us up to the conclusion that these are regular days, occurring in connected, temporal sequence, concluding the work of creation on the sixth day, with the seventh day devoted to the first sabbath.*** [bold emphasis mine]

*In these days, God not only created the world, he created time. **In these days, God not only created time, he defined its divisions.** It is the testimony of all history, and almost every culture, that **man operates on a seven-day week.** Yet this week cannot be defined on the basis of solar, lunar or stellar cycles. It is a cycle imposed on man, for his benefit and for God's glory. It is a **cycle which God, in his condescension to his creation, imposed upon himself, confining his work to six 24-hour days, that man may be truly able to imitate his Creator, may He be blessed forever.*** [bold emphasis again mine]

Two more confirmations remain. The first is a case of Scripture interpreting Scripture, where we employ the “analogy of faith” in comparing one inspired Biblical text with another inspired Biblical text. In the famous “New Testament/Covenant of Grace” chapter, **Jeremiah 31**, the LORD is going to the great but necessary lengths to show to New Covenant Israel—the true Israel of God, **Gal 6:16**—just how sure and everlasting this new covenant is (compare **Heb 8**, where **Jer 31:31-34** is quoted). Picking up in verses 35 and 36, we read:

**Thus says the LORD, who gives the sun for a light by day, the ordinances of the moon and the stars for a light by night...if those ordinances [day, marked by sunlight, and night, marked by moonlight and starlight] depart from before Me, says the LORD, then the seed of Israel shall also cease from being a nation before me forever. (NKJV)**

Now, what's the analogy? The LORD, in explaining just how Rock-solid His promises are in Christ—they are *all Yes and Amen* (**2 Cor 1:20**)—reinforces that assertion by pointing to his forever-reliable time-marking witnesses, the sun, moon, and stars, things all humans can relate to on a very basic level. In other words, we can count on another day and night occurring today just as the previous 24-hour period, and similar ordinary earth-days stretching on age to age. This is the common, universal experience of humanity: morning and evening/daytime and nighttime=one day; tomorrow as today as yesterday, the days continue to faithfully roll out, with the divisions marked by God's appointed ordinances.

In fact, *verse 35 is rooted in Gen 1:14-19*, and *verse 36 is rooted in Psa 148:5-6*. From those two passages, we can draw two unmistakable lessons:

1. God made our sun, moon, and even the stars for *our benefit*—in terms of dependable sustenance and instruction—and *His glory* ;
2. The sun, moon, and stars—and *earth* —aren't going away: **He also established them forever and ever; He made a decree which shall not pass away—Psa 148:6** (see also **Psa 72:5, 17; 89:36-37; 96:10; 104:5; 119:90; Ecc 1:4; Eph 3:21**)

We can tie all of this together in a few sentences:

1. To illustrate how unalterable God's promises in Christ Jesus are, He referred to the unfailing performance of His ordinary/earth-day time-marking witnesses He set in our sky, something every human being with the barest understanding can grasp;

2. If God wanted us to understand that His covenant promises were subject to change and open to multiple interpretations, He could have referred to any number of *other*, strictly *human* transactions to make a point about possible *variability*, but not the utter *stability* that's expressed in **Gen 1 & 8:22** and **Psa 148**; only days as ordinarily understood will work here;
3. What God is confirming in **Jer 31** stands entirely upon His faithfulness in providing for earth's inhabitants on a regular, ultra-consistent basis, proceeding ever-onward from the *first* ordinary/"solar"/24-hour days, composed of evening and morning/night and day, as in **Genesis 1**;
4. God is basically saying this: if it were possible to break My ever-enduring chain of day & night, *then* it would be possible to break My ever-enduring faithfulness to My true Israel; that's not going to happen. God brings all truth and order to His creation, not confusion (**1 Cor 14:33**).

The "other shoe" was hinted at in the Shaw quote. Only in God's example and command do we find the basis for the seven-day week. Still, *only 3* modern societies tried (and failed) to alter the pattern, *all 3 atheistic* : 1793 France, 1918 Soviet Russia, and 1960's Sri Lanka. (*In The Minds Of Men*, p. 444).

Just so we don't skate past this without due consideration, here's the second confirmation in a nutshell: THE ONLY REASON THERE IS THE UNIVERSALLY-ACKNOWLEDGED 7-DAY WEEK IS BECAUSE GOD DECLARED IT BY HIS PATTERN IN THE CREATION WEEK. Period; there's nothing else in the heavens or in the earth to which it can be attributed. Looking at how those 3 attempts by atheistic regimes turned out—none of 'em succeeded for long, despite their rewritten laws—it stands to reason that the 7-day week serves good purposes ordained by the Creator. How many people today are even aware that the French tried to establish the 10-day week and reset the historical clock at Year One? To say nothing of what the Bolsheviks and Ceylon (*later, Sri Lanka*) attempted. But this is more proof of my thesis: atheistic people and nations aren't setting up new deities for *themselves* to worship and obey, for all

Atheists—by definition—deny the existence of *any* god, but in particular they reject the God who they know is there by general revelation and conscience. So for them, it's total rebellion and widening the war by taking others down; the “alternative gods” are for those others. That's where Evillusion is so useful as misdirection through misconception; look *not* to God is the idea.

The keys to understanding how crucial it is to take God at His Word, literally and thoroughly, are; 1) The candid assessment of historical deviations from it, and 2) the motivations of those who do the deviating and the deceiving. In the next few chapters, we'll concentrate on these aspects. Because a trek through recent centuries can tend to drain even a *reader* almost as much as an actual participant, some comic relief has been injected. For the more serious, there are several “Biblical correctives,” where Bible passages seem to call out to be applied. Actually, if someone just consulted the Scripture Reference Index at the back of this work and gathered those passages into a file or booklet, one could skip the depressing history lesson, and learn directly from The Master! I can only hope to *reflect* His truth.

For the final quote of this chapter, we turn once again to Marvin Lubenow's *Bones of Contention*, p. 93 of the Revised and Updated edition. [You really should get the book; highly recommended!]

*The Darwinian Revolution, one of the most significant revolutions of all time, is generally thought to be the establishment of the concept of evolution on a solid, empirical base. Not so. In the words of Harvard biologist Ernst Mayr, **the Darwinian Revolution was actually a philosophical revolution from a theistic worldview to a worldview in which God was not involved in any way.***

[imagine that! the ardent evillusionist agrees with two creationists!  
bold emphasis mine]

There it is again. It's *not* about evolution just overwhelming people with mountains of undeniable evidence (“solid empirical base”). One of the leading evolutionists of our time admits it (*another* one, if memory serves). No, it's about

kicking God out of His own universe and the individual conscience. It's about a *philosophical revolution or rebellion*, and "Science" is only the favored weapon.

**Eph 4:14 (HCSB)—(Then) we will no longer be little children, tossed by the waves and blown around by every wind of teaching, by human cunning with cleverness in the techniques of deceit.**

### 3

## ENTER DOUBT: HOW EONS WERE WEDGED INTO GOD'S 7-DAY ACCOUNT

If you've never heard of outlandish schemes like The Gap Theory, The Day-Age Theory, Progressive Creationism, Theistic Evolution, or the Framework Hypothesis, you might well ask, "Why would anyone even think to disregard God's crystal-clear eyewitness testimony, as recorded by Moses in the first book of The Bible? Where would anyone get the idea that they knew more about the beginning than the Beginner Himself?" These are certainly fair questions, and—I must say—*inevitable* questions for any honest individual who doesn't have an anti-God agenda. But as the repairman might say, "Well *there's* your problem! You've got an agenda stuck in there, and it's gumming up the whole works!" Remove the outside agenda, and all will be clear again. So here's the opposition's agenda, coming from two different angles:

1. Evillusionists can't even begin to jerry-rig their Rube Goldberg-esque life-forming contraption without millions of years; they must have those eons, consarn it!
2. *Professing* Christians want to "go along to get along" and are more than willing to accommodate their God-hating neighbors by finding a crack in Genesis into which a wedge millions-of-years-wide can be pounded with the sledgehammer of SCIENCE.

And really,...that's pretty much all there is to it. Whether some were motivated by a desire to avoid confrontations (**Prov 29:25**), or to seek the praise of men (**John 12:43**), who among mere men could ever really know? But it happened time and time again. It grieves me to say that the "Christian" accommodators seemingly tried to outdo each other—starting in the *17th* Century,

well before Darwin—in inventing ways to move God’s Word aside to make room for the latest *scientific* claptrap as set-in-stone truth (to which the masses must bow). At this point in the work, we’ll just list the five main ones.

Recommended works which deal effectively with the following views include: Sarfati, *Refuting Compromise*; Rhodes, *The 10 Things You Should Know About The Creation Vs. Evolution Debate*; for more on theistic evolution, see Berkhof’s *Systematic Theology*, p. 139-140 & 150-164 especially.

1. The “Better God/Greater God Theory” of theological naturalists. God could be somehow more “glorifiable” if instead of doing all the creating Himself in a short span of time, He’d put the power of the creative process into His creatures, so that they, too, could create, only over a *much* longer span of time; very similar to the *Deist* notion that God got the cosmic ball rolling, but then walked away in order to let “the kids” take it from there—they’d get more satisfaction if they could do things their way. [I see !]
2. The Gap/Interval/Ruin-Restoration Theory. Between **Gen 1:1** and **Gen 1:2**—the only place in the historical narrative text where it was thought a gap *could* exist—there must be a gap of thousands, nay *millions* or even *billions* of years; I mean, who’s to say that there isn’t room for that kind of time there? [Well,...*God* ; but this didn’t stop the decidedly-unorthodox C.I. Scofield from putting this note into his “study/reference bible”: *The first creative act refers to the dateless past* [v. 1] *and gives scope for all the geologic ages.* [Emphasis mine; so now we know, because this prince of eisegesis has pronounced it so!]
3. The Day-Age Theory. Each “day” could have been an incredibly long time, even an epoch, so the creative process could’ve gone on for millions or even billions of years; who’s to say....? [Oh,...right, I forgot.] An off-shoot along the same lines proposed that the days *were* ordinary days, but the times *between* ‘em were *ever-so* long! So, for example, the plants were made millions of years before the sun was, and when the land animals finally arrived on the scene millions of years after the birds, some of the

birds just had to ask, “What took ya?”

[Some birds could say, *e.g.*, “Why did you make me wait all those eons? We were supposed to be having a *symbiotic* relationship!” They have a natural co-dependency, you see, something that’s necessary for *both* parties to survive. They were quite literally *made* for each other. Okay, I’m done now.]

Maybe Ian Taylor can better explain what I’m babbling about. On page 200 of one of my favorite books of all time, *In The Minds Of Men*, he writes—in dealing with the great difficulties encountered by any theory that involves spontaneous generation—that

*...perhaps the most serious are those organic units that are only effective when working in co-operation with one another. The process is called symbiosis, and examples can be found throughout nature from the molecular level, through the cells, to insects, plants, fishes, birds, and mammals, and perhaps we should even include man in a marriage partnership. [That last part kind of convicts me, but hey,...the man speaks the truth.] Photosynthesis...was said to have evolved, but there are three very complex components that must have arrived at the same point in time and space (within the primordial sea) in order for the process of photosynthesis to work. Chlorophyll, chloroplast, and cytoplasm are each very complex components containing thousands of atoms all in the correct order and arrangement and to have all three arriving at the same time diminishes the chances immensely. [To say the least! all of that direction, cooperation, and melding of purpose for the common good in a directionless all-out war for individual survival!]*

If properly thought through, day-age hypotheses can easily be seen to be full of huge holes. Such “theorists” have stumbled upon something that looks like a cute innovation on paper, something that just *maybe/kinda/sorta could* work in a fantasy world that’s cut loose from all reality. It’s “Wouldn’t it be nice, neat, or handy if...” all over again. And this is done in the name of *Science*?! Let *Science* explain that A to Z range of symbiotic relationships—from molecules to plants to

sea life to land mammals— without the Providential guiding hand of the Creator who thought of everything! And lest we forget, what *about* those processes like photosynthesis and reproductive mechanisms, and the fact that both the circulatory system and the respiratory system have to be intact, fully-functional, and working together from the get-go for animals and humans to live? A heart without the blood? Blood without the heart?

4. The Progressive Creation Theory takes the six-day creation account of Genesis and spreads the creative process out over vast spans of time, calling upon God to—at various times—create more advanced *individual species* in individual (separate) geographical locations, thus explaining (proponents claim) the wide variety of species and the fact of isolated populations (oh, ...and a super-old universe!). The most that could be said for this approach is that an attempt was *not* made to remove God *completely* from His created universe, as this hypothesis posits God as an active, living, and caring God, unlike the god of the Deists. But there's a big Biblical roadblock, **Gen 2:3**:

**Then God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it, because in it He rested from all His work which God had created and made (NKJV)**

Do you see the roadblock? God *rested from* all His creative work; He *stopped creating* (see confirmation in **Heb 4:3, 10: God ceased from His work**). Nowhere in Scripture do we read of God *resuming* His *creative* work of bringing new natural organisms into being. Certainly, God *does* continue to work in the ultimate Providential sense, as He sustains and upholds the creation (**Col 1:17, Heb 1:3**), and Jesus Himself speaks of His Father continuing to work (**John 5:17**), but **Col 1:16** reads,

For by Him all things *were created* that are in heaven and *that are on earth*...All things *were created* through Him and for Him. (NKJV)

“*Were created*” (past tense, with no implied continuance). Remember too,

this had been stated—even written in stone—in **Ex 20:11** and **31:17**: in six days God made (past tense), and on the seventh day He rested (stopped; brought the work to an end). As already noted, Scripture nowhere tells us of resumed, sporadic species-creation events beyond the literal Creation Week of **Gen 1:1-2:3**. There’s no Biblical basis for continuing “progressive creation.” It’s another illusion.

5. The Framework Hypothesis is another untenable approach (it won’t work). It’s another attempt to allow for the possibility of long ages of time to fit into the Genesis historical narrative, or merely to “reconcile” Biblical faith and scientific “facts,” as a proponent might contend; it makes no difference what the actual intent is, the results are the same. The basic idea is that the Genesis creation account is *not* to be seen as a *sequential historical narrative*, but rather as a story told within a *literary framework* that’s primarily designed to emphasize important *topics* without detailing a mandatory order of events. In simpler terms, it’s a story told in the form of an outline that can best make the point(s). The evidence for its validity is sketchy, and it breaks down in a hurry, especially when one considers that if this notion is true, Bible readers throughout all eras of history just didn’t “get it”; with the exception of a few 20th-21st Century intellectuals, *everybody* missed the major point(s?) of the Genesis creation account! Does that sound plausible? Would God, who commands us, urges us, pleads with us to read His Word—with the expectation of being able to grasp it and move forward with a joyful understanding of it—permit a nearly-universal *misunderstanding* of what He only *tried* to communicate in the opening and foundational chapters of His infallible written Word? His Word most definitely won’t return to Him void; it *will* accomplish His purpose (**Isa 55:11**). *All* Scripture is there for our instruction in righteousness (**2 Tim 3:16**). *God* is to be our Teacher. He offers the one thing needed, **Luke 10:42**; **John 6:68**.

Allow me to put before you a couple of quotes that have recently come to my attention. The first is from the popular and beloved Bible commentator, Matthew Henry (1662-1714). In his *Concise Commentary On The Whole Bible*, on page one, he observes,

“The first verse of the Bible gives us a satisfying and useful account of the origin of the earth and the heavens. **The faith of humble Christians understands this better than the fancy of the most learned men.**”

Amen! Well said, sir! And closer to our own day, famed writer, George Orwell (born Eric Blair, 1903-1950), had this to say,

**“Some ideas are so stupid that only intellectuals believe them.”**

I trust you see the connection. Here’s how I think these quotes relate to our recent subject matter: though I know quite well that neither the devout Henry nor the on-and-off again (nominal) Christian, Mr. Blair/Orwell referred *specifically* to evolution advocates (or Christian compromisers) in these quotes, those advocates certainly consider *themselves* to be “learned men” and world-class “intellectuals.” In turn—since they know everything better than everyone else—they have the privilege, nay, the *awesome responsibility* to guide the blind, deaf, and dumb sheep into the fold; the fold, that is, of God-less humanity. On their own, the “sheep”—humble, faithful Christians, especially—will tend to follow their instincts of conscience and pick up the trail that leads to truth. Christians *only* will follow The Good and Faithful Shepherd (**John 10**) all the way home to Heaven. But the innate conscience—in accord with general revelation (review **Rom 1-2**) will urge moves *toward* The True Shepherd and *away* from something *smelly* that this way comes. Realizing what they’re up against, the intellectual elite—the keepers of so-called truth, the society-driving overlords of science—also realize, therefore, that they must *fool* the people; the sheep simply must be conned for their own (and society’s) good.

The strategy should now be plain to anyone paying attention. Regarding **Genesis 1-11** (the real battlefield, which we’ll see as we go), attacks would have

to be made on three fronts;

1. For those sheep (the humble, faithful) who insist on believing their Bible, “new truth” will have to be brought into view; they need to be convinced that modern scholars-in-the-know have unearthed gems of insight that had been hidden for hundreds of years; who knew?!

2. This same group, Bible-believing Christians—I realize that in reality, that’s a redundancy—must be convinced that these really smart “Christian” scholars-leaders-clergy are also really Christians, so they have only God’s glory and the welfare of The Church in mind and at heart. *Dis* believe such earnest, wise, God-fearing men at your own peril! Heed them or be ignorant!

3. For those sheep who tend to doubt God’s Word at any point, why, *they must be helped to doubt!* They must be shown that the Bible is nothing more than the fallible words of human writers—full of errors—and not a seamless, error-free template of God’s truth written. “God’s Word” is nothing special, so it must be discredited, abandoned, and forgotten. At the very least, the Bible as it stands must go; the “bible” that supports our case must win out.

Part of the problem with the average, common Christian, is that he or she knows deep-down to trust God in all things, but there’s a prevailing tendency to keep that essential knowledge in a submerged compartment of the total everyday being. It’s too easy for most of us to forget the ever-presence of the triune, *omnipresent* God in our own *individual* lives. We walk by sight, *not* by the faith that we profess (**2 Cor 5:7**). We don’t see God with us, so we forget He’s there. [Note to self: remember what you’ve written.] Maybe it’s because God first entered our thoughts through the conscience that we tend to “position” Him there, as if He’s been assigned a guest room in the attic. But this *non-awareness* of His being right where we are at all times can lead to dangerous situations where compromising with misleaders and liars is all too convenient. Those fellow *humans*, we see; we want to please them, or at least go along with them, even to the

point of being doormats. “Turn the other cheek,” dontcha know? “Don’t be hatin’!” (*anything*, including—no, *especially*—sinful behavior as defined by God; then again, ... it *is* okay to hate *Christians* because they’re not as tolerant as the rest of the population). [Duly noted, oh tolerant ones!]

Before we get into some historical specifics on how the evillusionists got their clubfoot in the door of The Church and proceeded from there to stomp the whole world, let’s get our Biblical bearings. I’m talking about the proper Christian attitude toward the truth and the living Truth, Jesus Christ (**John 14:6**). Does our Shepherd want us to lay down for the wolves? He who laid down His sinless, perfect life of total truth for sinful, wandering sheep, does He want us to let the wolves separate us from *His* flock and devour us? If the answer isn’t obvious, here are some hints from God’s Word:

**Prov 29:25** (NKJV)—**The fear of man brings a snare, but whoever trusts in the LORD shall be safe/secure/set on high** [On the vantage ground of truth, no less!]

**Rev 21:8** (NKJV)—But the **cowardly**, unbelieving, abominable, murderers, sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters and **all liars** shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.

Note the words in bold: the *cowardly* and *all liars* shall have their part in Hell, and not in God’s Heaven. He watches very closely how each of us responds to the truth and The Truth. We can embrace, defend, and advance the truth or we can let it be distorted, trashed, and defeated, giving a (temporary) victory to hellbound liars. Truth can not be compromised; Christians can not be doormats for liars.

**2 Thes 2:10-12** (NKJV) 10 and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because **they did not receive the love of the truth**, that they might be saved. 11 **And for this reason, God will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie**

**12 that they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth** but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

Some more *mighty clear* Biblical truth, isn't it? If you let lies in, you get more of 'em and stronger ones. Just as God hardened Pharaoh's heart after Pharaoh himself took that course (**Ex 7-14**), the one who provides comfortable living quarters in the heart for lies—and banishes the truth—is headed for more lies and stronger delusions. Those who persist in their opposition to God will come to devouring fire.

**Psa 21:8-9 (NKJV)—Your hand will find all Your enemies; Your right hand will find those who hate you. You shall make them as a fiery oven in the time of Your anger; the LORD shall swallow them up in His wrath, and the fire shall devour them.**

**Heb 10:31—It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God...**

**Heb 12:29—For our God is a consuming Fire.** (both NKJV)

One more inescapable night/day contrast:

**John 8:44 (NKJV) ..[the devil] does not stand in the truth, because there is **no truth in him.****

**Titus 1:2 (NKJV) ...God, who cannot lie...**

**THE DEVIL CAN'T TELL THE TRUTH, AND GOD CAN'T LIE.  
MAKE THE SANE CHOICE!**

---

[WARNING: Patronizing condescension to follow; read with caution and elevated charity.]

I hope I don't have to bring out the finger puppets. [See? you were warned!]

The point has been made, no? God embodies truth and can't abide lies; no lies allowed in His Heaven. Satan—the father of lies, and a murderer from the beginning—can't abide the truth; it's not in his toolkit, although a truth-twisting wrench is his tool of first choice (**John 8:44, 2 Pet 3:16**).

**But I fear, lest somehow, as the serpent deceived Eve by his craftiness, so your minds may be corrupted from the simplicity (and purity) that is in Christ—2 Cor 11:3 (NKJV)**

Above are the inspired words of the Apostle Paul. We'd do well to note two things. First, Paul took **Genesis** as literal, historic narrative. There's no mythology involved there, and Eve, the serpent, and the deception were all real and took place in real history. Second, as Paul wrote elsewhere,

**Christ is the wisdom *of* and *from* God, and in Him are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge. (1 Cor 1:24 & 30 and Col 2:3)**

*All* the treasures of wisdom and knowledge; Christ has cornered the market on truth. In turn, He shares the truth—and nothing but the truth—with those who trust in Him, in simplicity and purity. For what else can anyone ask? He knows absolutely everything, He always speaks the absolute truth, and He tells us everything that's good for us to know. Why would anyone who's of sound mind turn from Perfection to willfully-ignorant lying rebels who only seek to destroy?

Evillusion is an eternal suicide pill. Christ is The Way, The Truth, The Life, and The Life-giver.

## TWO SEPARATE PATHS

We're probably ready now to go back to those historical attempts at "well-intentioned" compromise between the Word of God and the God-rejecting tool of Modern Science (mixing Christ with Belial, truth with lies, belief with unbelief— **2 Cor 6:15**). If you're interested in "extra credit" reading that will provide some pertinent parallels, take some time to re-familiarize yourself with the events described in **Daniel 3**. Try this as you read: wherever you see "the image of gold" or just "the image," read it as "the anything-but-God distraction" or just "anti-God Science" and see if you can appreciate by comparison what kind of loftiness this modern misdirector has attained. Also, note the punishment for the naysayers, those who foolishly cling to their God and their convictions: they get the furnace; they get fire, and that well-deserved! Modern-day Shadrachs, Meschachs, and Abed-Negos are most unwelcome. Fire 'em (take away their jobs), give 'em verbal fire (caustic ridicule), and toss 'em into the fire more literally (destroy 'em any way you can). Finally, remember that "the image of gold" was to be worshiped for no apparent reason; no justification was given. The decree was simply, "Bow down to the image or die!" So that's the final parallel: we're not given any credible evidence for evolution, but...well, just bow down to it as the non-god, that's all! Why bow down to Science-Evolution? Shut up, *that's why!!!*

What's laid out in the next chapters can be seen as a type of timeline/bio-sketch hybrid that I hope will serve to connect the dots from Bacon to Darwin to today's near-universal acceptance of some form of Evillusion. What I've focused on are—

1. The points of entry for key parts to the "theory" and/or doubts about what was taught in Scripture; who introduced what and when (and sometimes, why)
2. Hints at the "zeitgeist" (German, "time-spirit" or "spirit of the age"—what was "in the air" at the time (public discussions, influential writings and key events)

3. Points at which church “leaders” capitulated—whatever their motives—and gave ground to the proponents of non-biblical illusions
4. The Biblical correctives that were forgotten, ignored, or just plain rejected, though they were readily available throughout the centuries, never changing, and Rock-solid

I hope the reader can appreciate the fact that the author’s aim was to gather a large amount of historical bits and pieces from several trustworthy sources and distill them into a relatively concise version of what went wrong/where the wheels came off/how the battle was lost (though not the *war*, I am quick to remind). It’s hoped, too, that readers will recognize the fact that people from several nation-states and all points on the theist-atheist spectrum have taken part in this soul-destroying, tragic enterprise. Two final suggestions for American Christians in particular: 1) Note well the trend from doubt to disbelief to destruction, and 2) how Evillusion began in Europe, overran England, and jumped the Atlantic to our own shores, where it has found a home as the default doctrine of origins and alternative to faith. Christianity requires rational faith, but evillusion requires faithless *irrationality*.

### KEY TO THE “TWO PATHS” CHART:

Think of the Path Of Truth as the path which starts with the fear of the LORD (the beginning of knowledge and wisdom) and culminates in an ascension to the Truth Himself and God’s heavenly realm. To stay on that path, all we have to do is follow our unerring guide, The Word (**John 1:1-5**). He knows the way to God because that’s His eternal home, the place from which He came to us on earth (**John 3:31, 7:28-29, 8:23**). He knows the only way to the Father, and He *is* that singular way (**John 14:6**). So it’s vitally important to keep our eyes on *The Word* and *in* His written Word (The Bible), or else we’re sure to lose our way. Blind guides are worthless to us and even to themselves. They’re headed for nowhere good, and each step off the path increases the likelihood of getting permanently, hopelessly lost. And those who aren’t bereft of sight? They’d better keep that One Way (Path of Truth) in sight at all times, so they can get back on it when the deep-deeper-deepest woods are sucking them in, making it ever more difficult to even catch a glimpse of the Way to Truth and Life.

So let's fill in the scenario. Imagine that the Path of Truth leads straight up to God, but with a barely noticeable incline (a relatively easy hike with unparalleled security, because of our Guide). The head of this trail is the same point from which the alternative path—the *descending* one—takes off; it's so close that the hikers can not only see each other, but shake hands and exchange well-wishes as they begin their treks in different directions. With each step, the Truth-seekers make progress in their gradual ascent *toward* the truth and God, while each step on the other path is a step *down and away* from truth and God. In between the two paths is lush vegetation in the form of bushes and tall-to-giant trees, so after only a few steps down and away, those on path #2 are already losing sight of path #1 as it rises steadily, even when unseen from path #2. Keep this picture in mind.

Oblivious to any potential danger, the destruction-path people are forging ahead with the utmost confidence in *their* guides because “they seem to know more about these things than we ever will!” This will prove to be utterly misplaced confidence and fatal in the long run. Still, they're “among friends” who “certainly wouldn't do them any harm,” so the party rolls on down the trail. Nightfall could easily be right around the corner—it's always hard to tell in the deep woods—as could a fatal fall *period*. But it's only the squeamish and the foolish who'd want to turn back now, right? The die-hards are gonna gut it out and follow this path *wherever* it leads! Even if it leads to nowhere (nihilism). They're just happy to not have “God” looking over their shoulders and telling 'em what to do. That's the real point of this trek.

THE MORAL OF THE STORY: As leading figures in philosophy, literature, and science gained stature in the eyes of the “great unwashed” (the illiterate, stupid, lazy, and common-bred, in the eyes of these leaders), they began to hitch their career-wagons to the bulls of SCIENCE. Many of the clergy (church leaders) saw this strong trend, and as they became more concerned with suffering loss to their *personal* reputations, they quickly abandoned their first love: Jesus Christ (**Rev 2:4**). One after another, they rushed to get a seat at the world's scientific discussion table. Some truly wanted to reconcile faith and reason, but too many were just plain buffaloed into throwing faith—in the Creator, Christ

**(John 1, Heb 1, and Col 1)**—over for the new darling non-faith, SCIENCE. Those who turned their backs on Christ—whether willingly or *unwittingly*—found common cause with the God-displacers who were *always* looking for ways to kick God out of His own universe. Those who should've been leading others *toward* God could be found on the other path that leads away from God, Truth, and Life.

# STEPS OFF THE PATH OF TRUTH

(A selective timeline; explanatory sketches follow)

JOHN 14:6



- Destination: darkness & destruction
- 1883+ Evillusion promoted worldwide
- 1868+ McCosh plunges Princeton
- 1860+ Asa Gray turns Harvard to Darwin
- 1864-Spencer: evolution explains *all*
- 1860+ Kingsley promotes, praises Darwin
- 1859-Darwin: *On the Origin of the Species*
- 1844-Adam Sedgwick sells out to long-agers
- 1844-Chambers—*Vestiges...* (anonymously)
- 1841-Hugh Miller—gap to day-age to suicide
- 1837-39-Pye-Smith: *local* creation and flood
- 1837-Agassiz—brings ice age into discussion
- 1836-Bridgewater Treatises also influential
- 1835-37-Edward Blyth influences C. Darwin
- 1830-33-Charles Lyell—*Principles of Geology*
- 1826-28-John Fleming's works influence Lyell
- 1823-George S. Faber—first day-age theorist
- 1820-Buckland—*Vindiciae Geologiae* (long ages)
- 1813-Cuvier—first “progressive creationist?”
- 1809-Lamarck—first coherent theory of evolution
- 1804-Chalmers—introduces Gap Theory in sermon
- 1802-Playfair—interprets Hutton for the masses
- 1798-Malthus—Population catastrophe inevitable!
- 1796-Laplace—nebular hypothesis (for solar system)
- 1795-Hutton—brings in *long*-age uniformitarianism
- 1791+-*Erasmus* Darwin—evolutionary writings
- 1778-Buffon—*Epochs of Nature* (earth 75,000 yrs. old)
- 1755+-Kant (agnostic) confuses things further
- 1710-Gottfried Leibniz—deistic *Theodicy* off the mark
- 1696-William Whiston—*A New Theory of the Earth*
- 1691-John Ray, etc.—Greater/better God theology
- 1681-Thomas Burnet—*Sacred Theory of the Earth*
- 1670-Spinoza-*impersonal*, pantheistic god (ala Einstein)
- 1637-Rene Descartes—doubt *everything*, rationalism
- 1605, 1620-Francis Bacon—*Two Books of God*, empiricism

(ONE SURE GUIDE)

Psa 111:10

Prov 1:7 & 9:10

THE PATH OF TRUTH

(Start with God, go to God)

Jer 6:16: “the good way”

Prov 14:12 & 16:25

Rom 1:20-23 & 6:21

THE WIDE WAY OF LIES, DESTRUCTION, AND DEATH (start

with man, steadily increase distance between God and man)

“we will not walk in it” (the good way rejected)

## TIME-POINTS: A BRIEF HISTORY OF A GREAT LIE

First of all, a disclaimer: I'm well aware that this whole mess didn't start with Francis Bacon in 17th Century England. The idea of a universe that was *not* created by God got started (*publicly*, at least) in about the 6th/5th Century BC, when Greek philosophers like Anaxamander, Protagoras, Democritus, and Epicurus began to propose such nonsense (against universal human conscience). Aristotle, who was, broadly speaking, the first *deist*, thought of God as the Prime Mover who became an absentee landlord. But before he moved away from his creation, he instilled some sort of creative capacity in nature. So that's where that seed was initially sown.

But by far—and worldwide—the prevailing thought was that *some* living, powerful entity created (before anything else existed)—with intention and purpose—all of the elements that came into being when our universe got its start. Regardless the name by which the Deity was called, humanity on the whole has always recognized that it takes a Living First Cause to generate other living organisms, and *all* matter, for that matter. Anything that comes *into* existence must have a beginning and a cause. That in turn logically requires an ultimate *self*-existing Being to begin all else. This was certainly the mindset in continental Europe and England in the early 17th Century, where we start out.

\*\*\*[**Hints to alert readers** (because you're my favorites): this section is wordy, and it brings in several names and terms which may be unfamiliar to you; don't let that bother you, but if it starts to get to you, take advantage of a bonus feature that's been provided—**one-page key points summary on p. 159**; you may skip ahead and back and forth—no quiz to take (at least as far as you know); it's up to you]

**1605: Francis Bacon** (1561-1626), English philosopher-statesman-lawyer publishes *The Advancement of Learning* and begins to formulate his **inductive (scientific) method** based on **empiricism** (observation-induction-hypothesis-test/experiment-draw conclusions from the data-prove/falsify). Until Bacon and the new methodology, the way of “doing science” was largely the way the ancient

Greek *philosophers* had done it (Aristotelianism): you'd observe how nature seemed to work and then you'd basically think out loud about the materials and processes involved, and the philosopher who presented the most logical explanation prevailed until he was out-thought; that process was mostly *rational*, or thought-driven (the battlefields of "science" were largely in the minds of elite thinkers). Bacon saw a better way to reach more certain conclusions about how things really did work: one could observe nature (senses-driven), form a starting point assumption (working hypothesis), and proceed to test the hypothesis/assumption through experimentation; then the *data* (gathered information) would either validate or invalidate the assumption (prove or disprove/falsify); the results of experimentation would determine the truth of a claim. Bacon was clearly interested in discovering the truth in any situation: as a lawyer, as a politician, as a scientist, and as a Christian. In the opening words of his essay, *Of Truth*, he wrote,

What is truth? said jesting Pilate; and would not stay for an answer. (1597)

We could cite any number of instances where Bacon's words testify to his Christianity and his desire to discover the workings of nature *under God* —and with God's help—in order to help humanity. There's really no reason to doubt his sincerity in his life's work, passions, and goals. After all, he never attained great wealth by his great learning, and he died deep in debt.

WHERE BACON WENT WRONG: though *he* operated with and under a Christian worldview and started with God, his writings, especially *Novum Organum* (1620, the year that the Pilgrims landed in the *New World* on Plymouth Rock) and *New Atlantis* (published a year after his death) gave some hints for "baby steps" away from God's Biblical revelation and essential providence. By referring to the **two Books of God**—The Bible *and* Nature—he put the general revelation of the creation on the same exalted level as God's special, saving revelation. Today, progressive creationist Hugh Ross seems to have built his whole agenda on this false notion, but he's only one of thousands since Bacon who have bought into it. Let me put a fine point on the ramifications: God has *exclusively* attached His promises to The Word of God, that is, The Living

Word of God, Jesus Christ, and the written testimony of/to/by Him, The Holy Bible (66 books, and not a 67th). When Bacon implied that *all* revelation was equally trustworthy, and that all discovery should be dedicated to advance humanity, he erred on both counts. He provided entry points for both a diminished respect and need for the Creator-Sustainer *and* the new goal of an *elevated mankind via Science*—apart from God, out from under Him. Mankind could now (supposedly) learn essential truth directly by paying attention to nature and interacting with it. God’s role was thereby diminished. This was the first pushing of God to the margins (even if unintentional on the part of a Christian man).

*New Atlantis* was Bacon’s **utopian** vision of a world where an elite group of scientific thinkers would run things—all for the betterment of humanity—and an active God would not be so needed. Sound familiar? It should, because every utopian vision that has “graced” our world since Plato’s *Republic* has been built around this idea of rule-by-elite without the supervision or intervention of God. *Bacon* didn’t take it so far as to eliminate God, but for just about every utopian in history, that’s the end-game goal.

Another less-obvious connection between the “Father of Modern Science” and Modern Science as it exists today is the confusion (mixing) of the two main areas of science. Let’s review: there’s *operational/working science*, where things *can* be observed (now) and *tested and proved or falsified* through *repeatable experiments*; the other main branch is the *science of origins*, or the *necessarily limited* science of *philosophical speculation* on how everything came to be (originated) in the first place. Of course, that assumes that God’s personal and inerrant eyewitness account in *Genesis*—the “*book of beginnings*”—is rejected. Speculation is all that’s left in that case, since the origin of all things can *not* be repeated and can *not* be presently observed, much less tested.

When operational science and origins science are confused, chaos reigns, and that’s the way all God-opposers like it. Evillusionists encourage and exploit this confusion at every turn. It’s to their great advantage if the average person never figures out that what these “men of science” are engaging in is philosophical

speculation, and not working science. They've put forth a fantastical fable and paraded it around as "fact." Real, true science invites—requires, actually—honest collecting, use, interpretation, and presentation of the data and evidence, be it pro- or con- one's favorite hypothesis. But sold-out, *so-called scientists hate* honest inquiry; they insist on monopolies in every forum and every institution.

So even though we can be certain that Bacon had no intention whatsoever of creating a faith-shredding dragon, such a monster did he create because of the way his method has been abused and merged with anti-God philosophy. Maybe the best way to sum up Bacon's legacy is to show what was in place *before* Bacon, how *he* viewed the role of science, and how Current Science—the antiGod—defines things. The ABCs:

- A) (For **A**ristotle) "Science" was a few parts observation and many parts philosophy; the idea that seemed to be the most logical (without careful testing) was assumed to be true and ruled
- B) (For **B**acon) he saw the study of nature (science) as "Religion's most faithful handmaiden" (*ministerial role under the magisterial God* described in the Bible); recognized that science had limits
- C) (For **C**urrent Science, in the role that the majority of scientists today see themselves) SCIENCE is *without limits* in obtaining essential knowledge and determining what is true about a universe that is entirely composed of natural matter (100% material) and is devoid of any *supernatural* force or entity; since SCIENCE accepts only naturalistic-materialistic explanations for an entirely naturalistic-materialistic universe, it is in complete control of the truth, and therefore *magisterial* ; SCIENCE has declared that evolutionary theory is fact; end of discussion

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** Stick to God's Word: again, the **66** (not 67) books of The Bible; don't try to "improve" on it as a source for data on origins. There *is* no other source. The Triune God who can not lie (**Titus 1:2, Heb 6:18, Num**

23:19) has given mankind the *only eyewitness account*, and to question it is to call God a liar (**Rom 3:4**). He was there, and nobody else was. He recorded His actions in His perfect Word. Read it; believe it; advance under His sovereign providence. There are no *real* mysteries about the origins of the universe. All of ‘em were solved in the opening verses of Scripture. Yes, by all means, *do science—operational science*—for that gives glory to God, since it shows a desire to learn more about the *Creator* through the study of His creation. That’s all good. But you *can’t* do science *without* God; you can’t change or supersede the laws He’s built into His own universe—although *He* can go over and above them—so don’t you even try. You’ll just make yourself insane (**Rom 1:21-32**).

**1637: Rene Descartes** (1596-1650), French mathematician-philosopher publishes *Discourse on Method*. The “Father of Modern Philosophy” and founder of *scientific rationalism* revived both *rationalism* and *dualism*, bringing them back under his own brand name. Now I won’t pretend to be an expert on Cartesian philosophy, but let me try to boil down his “contributions” to the Evillusionary thought-path: 1) De-emphasized empiricism (collecting data through the five senses) because he deemed the senses untrustworthy; they could be easily deceived. 2) Emphasized human reason (rationalism) as the optimal path to true wisdom, with correct reasoning equating to the highest virtue. 3) Combining the first two principles, he concluded that it was best to *doubt everything* but keep thinking; temporary “explanations”—even if suspected or *known* to be inadequate and/or false—*should* be held onto until some better explanation comes along. [Now who does *that* sound like?—I suggest any number of today’s “elite scientists” who will come up with *any* “possible” explanation—no matter how unbelievable —and insist on its validity—despite all evidence to the contrary—because they *know* something will eventually come along and prove the *fact* of evolution; it’s just a matter of *time* (there they go again!) ; so we end up with textbooks full of “*placeholder facts*” that are like dead men still treading water.] 4) He gave lip-service credit to God as the Creator (as a Catholic in 17th Century France, he *had* to do that), but he held that once God had done the work of creation, He removed Himself from it, and a *totally-mechanistic universe* has been running on its own ever since. 5) *Dualistic* nature of man: *total* separation of body and soul (he couldn’t locate the soul in the human anatomy—though

there had been some talk of the *pineal gland* as the soul's home, so he insisted on a separate existence entirely). 6) Between his totally-mechanized universe, his total dependence on his *own human* reason, his rejection of the Bible and all external authority, and his concept of dualism, he excluded God from his scheme of thought. So *that's* why he's so popular with the Science vs. God crowd! He removed God as the guarantor of *objective* truth, and put himself and his *subjective* truth in command [Even though we should doubt *everything*; but hey, that doesn't present a problem or anything, right?]. He essentially moved the debate from what was true to what could be known through human reason alone (especially *his!* ).

Since it should be fairly obvious where this guy went wrong—his anthropomorph-ism, or man-centeredness—let's move right to the BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES: Of course, we must start with God, live by His rules (including both His moral Law and the working laws of His universe as *they govern science*) and always try to move *toward* God and toward the Perfect One. There is no pot of Golden Wisdom at the end of the path that humanity prefers, but there is a pit. Had Descartes cared enough to learn what *God* thought, he'd have saved himself and countless others untold frustration and eternal misery. It's too late for Descartes, but to his fans today we say: Take up and read; pick a place in God's Word and let the Author guide you through it. *There* is true wisdom for body *and* soul, and it's *un-doubtable* as well.

**1670: Baruch (or Benedict) Spinoza** (1632-1677), Dutch “triple-apostate” philosopher publishes *Tractatus Theologico-Politicus*, which is condemned by both Catholic *and* Reformed authorities. He had *already* been excommunicated by the Jewish community situated in Holland 14 years earlier (thus, a *thrice*-rejected religionist). Publicly called out and castigated as he was, his influence on his *own* generation was minimal (too dangerous to associate with him). However, he's earned a spot on this evillusionary timeline because of his widespread influence on generations that followed, beginning with 18th Century Deists and radicals. In our own age, he's big, especially with humanists and radical environmentalists. They like his redefined, impersonal “god” of nature itself in combination with universal regularity through nature's laws (pre-figuring uniformitarianism).

It really got my attention that Einstein claimed “Spinoza’s God” as his own. Who or what was Spinoza’s god? Not the Biblical God or any other *who*, but a *what*; an impersonal, ***pantheistic nature-god*** —“*deus sive natura*” was his term of choice (**god or nature**: merely two names for the same reality). Another term applied to Spinozism/Spinozism is ***neutral monism***: all is one, and all values are neutral). Can you maybe see why all three of those religious bodies were so upset? But there’s more. He built on Descartes’ rationalism (they lived in close proximity to each other when Descartes fled France for the less-dangerous environs of Amsterdam); he denied the existence of human free will, making **humans subject to natural impulses only** (without options or any moral culpability—no good, evil, or sin, only blind subjection to natural laws; hence, the *neutral* part); he denied the immortality of the soul; he claimed that The Law (God’s moral law) was never actually given by God, so not binding on the Jews (or anyone else); he denied the personal nature of God and anything supernatural (including all miracles). In short, Spinoza took it upon himself to redefine the Biblical Triune God as a pure-intellect nature-god.

This impersonal entity manifested itself in infinite modes, with only two of those modes recognized by humanity: **thought and extension** (or intellect and matter taking up space).

[Please don’t look for further explanation from me, but here’s my possibly helpful term for his philosophy in a nutshell: ***deterministic pantheism***—nothing but irrevocable cause and effect, dictated by impersonal nature, which was to be deified only on intellectual grounds.]

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** Spinoza’s core problem seems to have been his total rejection of the ***Creator-creature distinction***. Had he kept that straight, he could’ve started and ended with the God who *is*, and not constructed in his wicked imagination the idol of a god who is everything—er,...*that* is everything. Recommended reading for disciples of Spinoza who are still drawing breath: **Gen 1-11** (for true knowledge of the Creator who *personally* acted in creating all creatures, judging real sin against His real commands, providing salvation from a real and deserved everlasting punishment, destroying all but a providentially-

*preserved* remnant of the creation as the real consequences of dedicated disobedience, and later scattering the people groups from their Dedicated to Disobedience and Destruction Mega-Convention in Babel (even approximately 100 years after The Great Flood, they were as stubborn as ever); **Rom 1-15** (by the end of chapter 5, just about everything Spinoza contended for will have been consigned to the dustbin); the Gospel according to **John** will obliterate any pantheistic/impersonal notions about God, the **Ultimate Personal Ruler**, a **living Being** above all forces, and the **Sole Source Of All Life**, intellect, and matter; *over* it all, not identical to its sum total.

#### QUICK RECAP—

From the English Protestant Bacon to French Catholic Descartes to Dutch triple-apostate pantheist Spinoza, we've already seen a transition in thinking from nature and its study (science) *under* God to purely natural mechanisms *detached* from God to nature *as* god, with the living God banished from His own creation. And all of this 189 years *before* the 1859 publication of Charles Darwin's most famous and destructive work.

**1681: Thomas Burnet** (1635-1715), English theological naturalist publishes *The Sacred Theory of the Earth*. Since my introduction to Burnet came from a specific source that I can immediately identify—Cornelius G. Hunter's book, *Science's Blind Spot* (more info in Bibliography)—I think a short quote from that fine work will best tell the story (pages 20-21):

*One important theological argument for naturalism is that it would be clumsy for God to intervene against nature. God created the universe, so it hardly seems fitting that he would need to intervene in it. **A non-intervening God is a greater God.** [bold emphasis mine] This was the view of the Anglican cleric Thomas Burnet (1635-1715), who authored the popular geologic work Telluris Theoria Sacra (The Sacred Theory of the Earth) in 1681. "We think him a better Artist," wrote Burnet, "that makes a Clock that strikes regularly at every hour from the Springs and Wheels which he puts in the work, than he that hath so made his Clock that he must put his finger to it every hour to make it strike." In other words, special divine action should be minimized.*

*It is better for God to create a self-sufficient machine than to make one needing divine intervention. [end quote, p. 21]*

Did you catch the subtle shift, the “baby step” away from the Biblical God who *is*, to a “greater God” or “better Artist” of human imagination? The “God” that the Greater/Better God Theologians like Burnet have manufactured in their minds is just as much of an idol as a chunk of wood or stone. This is especially galling, coming from a professed Christian leader, one who certainly should’ve known better. ***Finite sinful creatures can’t redefine the infinite holy Creator*** . When you pause to consider Burnet’s statement for a moment, I think you can agree that there’s a lot of arrogance packed into it; telling Almighty, Eternal God how *He* could have *improved* upon His total *perfection* !?! Wow! Certainly, the *deistic tendency* in this can be seen as well: “Thanks for creating everything, God—for setting it all in motion—but we’ll take it from here. Your services are no longer required. Don’t stay in touch.”

Another thing to note in Burnet’s words: like Eve in **Gen 3:3**, he added an element of undue harshness that doesn’t belong. Eve apparently appended to God’s command to not eat of a certain tree *her added* command, “nor shall you *touch* it,” making it appear (or convincing herself) that God was excessively harsh and small-minded in that regard: He won’t even let us *touch* it! Burnet does something similar when he portrays the Clockmaker as a *constantly* intervening artist who must “put his finger to it *every hour*.” He portrays God as both incompetent and meddlesome, whereas ***the true God only intervenes with timely grace, although His moment-to-moment sustaining of the entire creation is always necessary (Col 1:13-17, Heb 1:1-3)***. So if this Anglican churchman thought that he was doing God a favor by bringing Him into line with the speculations of science, he was sadly mistaken. I see it instead as the first sign of a general willingness on the part of “churchmen” ever since to trim God down to a manageable god that can be even completely ignored without consequence; a god that has sense enough to stay out of the Kingdom of SCIENCE, where there’s a new majesty. The god who went away (and stays away) is the god of such capitulators and outright pagans alike. We see that cooperation comes easily to one who’s been co-opted. Burnet allowed SCIENCE to assume the *magisterial* role

that belongs only to God. Whereas Bacon recognized that science is properly limited to a *ministerial* role—the role of a dutiful servant—Burnet, John Ray [next profile] and others paved the way for its rise to the role of master, and eventually, as virtually *unchallenged* master. The cave-in game was afoot.

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** There *were* Bibles around in England in those days, and an Anglican “churchman” certainly had access to them, so it’s awfully hard to understand just what motivated Burnet to neglect or doubt the Scriptures as written. Where was the pressure coming from? He did defend a worldwide flood, so it appears he understood at least **Gen 1-8** fairly well. A review of **2 Cor 6:14-18** might have enabled him to realign his allegiances and priorities, however, so that he could have walked away from the swirling deceptions gathering force in his day, and back to The Ancient of Days (**Dan 7**).

**1691 John Ray** (1627-1705) English botanist, natural theologian publishes *The Wisdom of God*, in which he follows Burnet’s lead in “Greater/Better God Theology,” attempting to redefine God’s creative work in conformity to science. While it’s hard to finger Ray as an equally guilty party in this rogues’ gallery timeline, he did provide an opening or two for the Evillusion-pushers. When this devout Christian hinted that the deistical, non-involved god that was gaining popularity in those days was a valid god, at least *resembling* the Biblical God, well,.... let the toppling of true religion by science proceed!

Like Burnet, he saw a world beset by several problems, and he didn’t want to blame the Creator for them, so he began to think in terms of nature as a *co*-creator. Aristotle’s suggestion was recalled. The geological malformities and irregularities that Burnet called “a world lying in its rubbish” and Ray called nature’s “errors and bumbles” he laid at the feet of this secondary cause/*co*-creator; beauty and order came from God, ugliness and disorder came from natural causes. Of course, that *sounds* pious and biblical, but it’s wrong for at least two *genuinely* Biblical reasons. First, the Bible tells us that God did indeed create a beautiful and perfect world—it was all *very* good (**Gen 1:31**)—even with, we can safely assume, some uneven mountain ridges that offended Burnet’s aesthetic sensibilities [We call that *variety* or *diversity*, Mr. Burnet and Mr. Ray] ; so the initial

*un*-marred creation was a thing of perfect beauty. Second, Ray didn't acknowledge the *true* cause of all disorder: sin (**Gen 3, Rom 5, 1 Cor 15**); exactly opposite King Kong, it wasn't "beauty that killed the beast" but the beast of sin that killed the beauty. Sin and its consequences—especially the global, year-long catastrophic flood of **Gen 6-8**—were the secondary causes/agents and means of destruction. It wasn't nature acting on its own as an earthshaper, but natural forces directed and unleashed by an angry God. According to one biographer at least, Ray discounted—or even denied—both the Noahic flood and supernatural intervention. If Ray, who was seen as a sincere Christian, failed to communicate to the world just how it happened that "errors and bumbles" were and are ever-present in nature and among humanity, it just may have been because he'd forgotten the doctrines of original sin and the effects of The Fall, and even the fact that God is the God of the *living*, and He's never going to wander off to more interesting projects. He's actively involved in His creation, moment-by-moment and forever (see **Ecc 1:4, Psa 104:5, 119:90, Eph 3:21**).

One more brief quote from Hunter (*Science's Blind Spot*, pages 21-22) should introduce another Burnet-Ray link and point to how both erred:

*...Ray argued that God would not "set his own hand as it were to every work, and immediately do all the meanest and trifling'st things himself drudgingly, without making use of any inferior or subordinate Minister." For Ray, the details of nature were beneath God's concern. Better for nature itself to have a built-in creative capability. [end quote, p.22]*

This is another telling passage and, as I see it, another indicator of the character flaw of false piety. Have another look at the last part of that last quote: "For Ray, the details of nature were beneath God's concern. Better for nature itself to have a built-in creative capability." That's "better God" theology. I think Hunter nailed it here, too; his assessment of how Ray's writings were understood—and *continue* to be extrapolated when convenient—is right on the money. Deists, "Christian" compromisers, and atheists were—and are—comfortable with *that* god, a god who knows he has no business in our business of "evolving" the creation without help. That kind of god is harmless and presents no problems or limitations, so

those who want to believe in that “god” can embrace him without offending anyone; hey, that’s *their* fantasy, their trip.

The second “foot in the door” came mainly post-Darwin, when the high priests of Evillusion mocked Ray’s writings regarding the “fixity of *species*”—something that even today’s creationists don’t maintain, since we understand that what Ray *should have* said was “fixity of/within *kinds*.” The difference is important. Although transformation *between* Biblical *kinds* is never observed and will never be observed because of God’s preprogrammed limits, variation *within species* is observed and acknowledged; that’s simply built-in *genetic variability*. God made possible a wide range of variations within each kind. What Ray correctly surmised is that changes *between kinds* is not observed and, in fact, impossible.

But scientists today ignore the major semantical difference between what the Bible calls “kinds” and what *they* call “species.” For example, there are many variations (species) within the dog *kind*, but everything from Chihuahuas to Great Danes to coyotes to wolves are part of that *kind* grouping. There *are* different *species* within that one kind, but not one of ‘em descended from a fern. And never does a dog generate an elephant, a fish, or a flower. Ray only needed to speak more carefully and define his terminology according to the Bible. At the same time, he would’ve been defending the truth as it’s found in God’s Word, and the attackers would’ve had to fight the battle on *that* ground—in effect, publicly arguing with God Himself—rather than on the ground of their own choosing. So it seems to me that the BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES have already been suggested, but we’ll further specify: **Gen 1:11, 12, 21, 24-25; 6:20; 7:14; 8:19; Lev 11:14-29; Deut 14:13-18 (on kinds)**. Ongoing Providence? **Gen 22; Deut 8; 1 Sam 1 & 16; 2 Chr 33; Job 12 & 37; Psa 4, 5, 7, 11, 22, 63, 65, 66, 75, 103, 104, 121, 135, 139; Prov 16:33; Isa 20:5-6 & 45; Dan 4; Matt 5-7, 10; Luke 1 & 18; Acts 17; Rom 8; Gal 1:15-16; Eph 1:11; Phil 4:19 etc.** This is only a sampling, but it’s well worth one’s time to get a sense of this all-pervasive Biblical theme by consulting some of these passages.

**1696: William Whiston** (1667-1752), English mathematician-historian-theologian publishes *A New Theory of the Earth*. [Yes, it’s the same Whiston, an

Arian, who translated the works of Josephus.] Although he's a proponent of world-wide flood geology (per the Biblical record), he concocts a *cometary* cause for Noah's Flood (*not* to be found in the Biblical record). So now *comets* have been given creative capability, and God is removed from His creation via another route. Comets have since been implicated in all sorts of processes, including the origin of planet Earth as a result of a collision with the sun (see Buffon later). In addition, Whiston theorized that the six days of creation described in **Gen 1:1-2:3** were each actually a *year* in length, so thinking in *that* direction—toward time-flexibility, day-age theories, and long ages—began to take shape. [Burnet might have been the first to hold that year-for-day position, but I've seen conflicting reports; Whiston's position on that is clear] He also began the time-honored tradition of Christ-*dishonoring* datesetting, calling in 1706 for the Millennium's arrival in 1716, and (in 1736) for the end of the world, when—you may have guessed it—a *comet* would do the undoing.

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** Just take the inspired, unerring text as you find it, sir; **Deut 29:29** tells us that what is essential to know has been revealed. Don't strain your imagination in reaching for fantasies.

**1710: Gottfried Wilhelm Leibniz** (1646-1716), German mathematician-philosopher publishes *Theodicy*, a book-length philosophical treatise that seeks to defend God from criticism and blame for creating an *imperfect* world (the problems of evil, disease, suffering, death, and natural disasters). It's hard to assess from this great distance if Leibniz was a "devout Lutheran" as some said, or a deist who saw no role for Jesus Christ in the unfolding of history, as has been claimed by others familiar with his life. Either way, he did suggest—in writing—that the world that exists is the most perfect one that *could* exist, given the omniscience and omnipotence of God, the Creator. There's nothing wrong with that statement, and no thinking Christian would disagree with it, if we were to consider the world only in its *original* state (before sin brought in all of the evils that *clearly remain* in every age). And there's the first hint of a problem with his theodicy ("God-defense"): he doesn't explain how or why sin entered the world, bringing with it all those evils that we see. We're just supposed to accept them as inherent in nature because any possible world would apparently have some such

flaws. Furthermore, he believed in the *perfectability* of humanity, without any Biblical basis; it's something that Scripture is dead-set against.

Beyond that, there was the oddball Leibniz theory of *monads*, which held that “substantial forms of being” that are eternal, indecomposable, and individually sovereign are the elementary particle-elements of the universe. Quick check: is *any* of that Biblical? And *this* man tried—face-to-face—to straighten out Spinoza! So it really makes me wonder what was in the water in those days, since these widely-acknowledged *rationalist geniuses* (Descartes-Spinoza-Leibniz) not only came up with such weird imaginings, but were so successful in convincing others that they were plausible or, worse yet—true!

The final thing we must note with specific regard to our Evillusionary timeline is that Leibniz held that valid reason and faith can't contradict each other, since they are both gifts of God. Sounds like a rationalistic version of Bacon, doesn't it? Now God has *three books*, equally valid and ever-true: the general revelation/nature; the special revelation/Bible; and human reason (rationalism), since it, like faith, is the gift of God, and God wouldn't fight against Himself by allowing mankind to think without an *ultimately-perfectible collective reason*. Well, of course, you could drive a wide-load wagon through that loophole. When man's thinking is put on the same level of reliability as God's written Word, “all bets are off” and anything's “in play.” Open those floodgates! Remember, Leibniz was stunningly gifted (co-inventor of calculus with Newton, for just one thing), and he was thought by most to be a theist at least, or even an exemplary Christian, so people did follow his lead, and many still do today (*despite* the theist part). If such an intellectual giant conceives of a universe built on unseen, non-biblical *monads* that exist without Christ's upholding (**Col 1:16-17 & Heb 1:3**), what's to prevent *any* “theory” of pure conjecture from gaining traction in this sin-soaked, dumbed-down world?

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** It appears that Leibniz spent much time in independent thinking and very little time reading the Word of God. This is evident in his attempt to—in *reality*—defend his *own* blend of reason and faith in writing *Theodicy*, a book which *should've* defended the system that God has installed in

perfect wisdom and, equally, denounced sin as the perverter. He could hardly have gone so wrong with a proper understanding of **Gen 1-11 & Rom 1-5**, as well as the admonitions to not add monads (or anything else) to God's pure and perfect Word: **Deut 4:2, 12:32; Prov 30:5-6; Rev 22:18**. The undiluted Word of God is free of delusions. It is the best of all possible *Words*, Herr Leibniz.

**1755: Immanuel Kant** (birth certificate: *Emanuel Cant*) (1724-1804), German (Prussian) philosopher publishes *Universal Natural History and Theory of Heaven*. First clue to his overblown ego: look at that title! This earthbound, finite creature is gonna explain how *everything* got its start and what *heaven* is like (something that, I'm quite confident, he'll *never* know, agnostic that he was when he met his Maker in 1804). This vastly-overrated hero of modern philosophy is no hero to me or to any discerning Christian. What he did do well was convince himself that he knew what he was talking about and, in turn, far too many others. There is nothing there in his thinking for any student of Scripture, anyone who would seek essential, objective truth. Sure, modern humanist scholars like to try to impress each other with claims to a superior understanding of what Kant was all about, but in *my* simple God-fearing world, the most lucid understanding of Kant plus fifty cents in change will get you two quarters in return.

My questions for the Kant scholars are, "Suppose you conquer Kant completely; whaddya get for that? Can you cash that in for good money or a medal or a trophy? Or will you then be irresistible to the opposite sex, or at least one "significant other?" Is it worth thousands of hours of study to know that one guy inside-out? Finally, if the great *Kant* can't know certain things, what makes you think *you* can?

[Inside joke: Kant taught that there are two realms of knowledge, the *noumenal* and the *phenomenal*, with the former term applying to "the unknowable" —things beyond observation by the senses—and the latter to what *can* be observed, and therefore known; deep, huh? plenty more where that came from.]

Rap sheet, short-burst style: gas cloud origin of the solar system (the nebular hypothesis, an idea that actually originated 21 years earlier with another wacky

Emanuel, the Swedish mystic philosopher, *Swedenborg*); in 1763, he trotted out *The Only Possible Argument in Support of a Demonstration of the Existence of God* [oookay]; 1792: *Religion within the Bounds of Bare Reason* [I guess folks were still reluctant to accept the self-appointed World Religion-Definer's definitions, possibly due to the fact that such things were *unknowable*; maybe that was the problem; yeah, that could've been it]; man should think autonomously, *free from outside authority* (including God's authority, echoing Descartes); man alone can define knowledge and truth, and what can't be proved to exist can't be said to exist; morality is universal and innate (provided by the human good will itself), it **doesn't come from God through the conscience** (sort of a voluntary response to a universal "be good for goodness' sake" ethic; Jesus was a good man and only the best example of living according to the "categorical imperative" ("ought implies can"; his sense of duty towards humanity's general happiness is recognized and honored), but he is not God; Christianity is possible without the supernatural [quite a trick!], though more as an idealistic calming/taming influence than as anything real or essential; 1795: he issues his plan for *Perpetual Peace*, a world devoid of any wars. [Although without God, too; *Oh, tell us! tell us! tell us your plan and save the world, "god with us"!!* Sorry, but this egotistical pied-piper really gets on my nerves]

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** Where to start? He rejected *all* external authority—I do mean just about all authority outside of his personal interpretations—so he cut himself off (and all who follow him as well) from all essential knowledge (**Prov 1:7, 9:10 etc.**). If he hadn't been so full of himself, he might have found some room in his cranium for the *knowable* truth of God! It's too late for him, but Kantians still abiding on earth can *begin* to know by beginning with God and abandoning Kant. The life well-spent will be one spent not on the study of the likes of Kant, but on the study of the one true God, and in humble service to mankind under His direction. How professing Christians can put any stock in Kant is beyond me. Probably his **greatest error was in attempting to make ignorance of higher, spiritual things a natural virtue of sorts, and not a barrier that can and must be overcome by turning to Christ, the Wisdom of God (1 Cor 1:24, 30; Col 2:3)**. Summary: Kant says you can't know, God says you can; Kant says don't bother with the Word, the Word says don't bother with Kant.

An interesting but obscure dichotomy developed in the late 17th Century and early 18th. The theological naturalists, like Burnet and Ray, thought proof of God's hand in nature was better exhibited through strict order and uniformity with little variety. Kant and his ilk, on the other hand, insisted that special creation would be proved by *randomness*, as opposed to nature being well-ordered by default. This would've put God—if He wasn't God—in a “no-win” situation where He couldn't please both camps. But God doesn't have to worry about how He's doing in the opinion polls; He does as He pleases (**Psa 115:3, 135:6**). If we don't agree with His purposeful actions and declarations of fact, that's *our* problem.

**1778: Comte de Buffon** (1708-1788), French mathematician-naturalist publishes *Epochs of Nature*, in which it's proposed that **the earth, a product of a collision between our sun and a comet**, is in excess of **75,000 years old**, having gone through seven *epochs* (hence the title). Buffon (you may play with his name a little, *I* won't mind) also suggested that the days of **Genesis 1** were in reality **long ages** in themselves, so earth's age was expanding geometrically on his watch (*before* Hutton, I might add). His ego was a match for Kant's, as he considered himself to be one of the five greatest men in the history of mankind (for that list, I refer you to Ian T. Taylor's *In The Minds Of Men*, p. 43; much of this material on Buffon and several others comes from that highly-recommended work). His giant ego aside, Buffon did manage to influence folks with his fantastical fictions, including another bio-subject of ours, Lamarck, whom he mentored.

Other aspects of his proposed system included *spontaneous generation* and *environment-caused variations* that *could* be passed on to offspring (foreshadowing Lamarck). He rejected just about everything the Bible taught or implied, preferring his own imagination as the source of ultimate truth (in Cartesian-Spinozist-Kantian fashion, though less philosophical and more “scientific”). When you mix his anti-creationism with his opposition to flood-catastrophism with spontaneous generation with open-ended long ages and the possibility of nature-caused modifications of species, ***all of the elements necessary for a full-blown evolutionary hypothesis are already present in the late 18th Century***. We have this arrogant Frenchman to “thank” for pulling this all

together more than *60 years before* the error-prone Englishman, Charles Darwin, whose own grandfather is the subject of our next bio-file.

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** By now, if a person—or society—was on that second path, ever moving down and away from God’s Path of Truth, that good path would’ve been completely out of sight. The only way back would be to go *all* the way back to the trailhead, to the point of the beginning of wisdom, and switch paths. It’s Bible or bust!

**Even zeal is not good without knowledge, and the one who acts hastily sins.—Prov 19:2 (HCSB)**

It’s vitally important for each of us to take the time to honestly assess the situation. If the path we’re on now is not the path of truth, it will never get us there; there’s no merging of paths ahead. The only plan that will succeed is to abandon the path of doom...*now*... and turn back to *The Way, The Truth, and The Life* (**John 14:6**). He just happens to be The Creator and The Judge, too (**Col 1:16; John 5:22**). Think about what that means and note well.

**Stand by the roadways and look. Ask about the ancient paths: WHICH IS THE WAY TO WHAT IS GOOD? Then TAKE IT and find rest for yourselves—Jer 6:16 (HCSB)**

## TAKING STOCK: AD 1779+

Let's take a break from the slog toward destruction and just take a look around, 1779-style. Considering that a Biblical generation is usually figured to be about forty years—like the wilderness-wandering generation of The Exodus, and David's serving *his* generation, reigning for forty years, for just two examples—we see that Bacon's famous, foundational works are about four generations behind us at this point (159-174 years prior), and Darwin's *Origin of the Species* is just two generations ahead (80 years on the nose). All of the influential writers-philosophers-naturalists we've heard from up until now have been Continental Europeans or English (we'll call 'em *British* from now on). Influence in the naturalist-scientific world will continue to originate in Europe and flow westward to America, beginning, for the most part, after 1860. But now (in 1779, that is), America and France are allied against Britain, and Spain has jumped in against the British as well (at Gibraltar). Those two muckraking Frenchmen, Rousseau and Voltaire, have *both* died the year before, but their influence will in large part drive the bloodbath of the French Revolution just ten years down the road. Scotsman David Hume has mocked and trashed the miraculous with widespread success (for the time being, at any rate); Charles Darwin later acknowledges his influence to be profound.

Turning our gaze back toward America, we see the colonists fighting for their independence “with a firm reliance upon divine Providence” (quote from the Declaration of Independence), and Europe's philosophic dart-throws are far from their minds. For now. But despite the fact that Europe's in an uproar and its armies are busily engaged all over the world (the British are involved in West Africa and India, too!), the process of putting maximum distance between God and would-be autonomous (self-ruling) man is ongoing. And why not, when you think about it? Fallen man without God can *only* think to *blame* God. Always blame one *not* in present company, right? It's all his fault (assuming that He *did* exist, anyway), and we are free of blame. When sin is either not acknowledged or not

accounted for (ignoring **Gen 3, Rom 5, 1 Cor 15**)—those great transgressions of *omission* of Spinoza, Leibniz, and Kant—all blame shifts from “innocent” humanity to a scapegoat god who exists only to get blamed. That’s how it has always been with the naturally unregenerate human being: **Gen 3:15; Rom 8:7; 1 Cor 2:14; Jas 4:4.**

Right now, we’ll resume our journey to madness. It’s 1791, and we’ll focus for a while on the grandfather of *both* Charles Darwin and Francis Galton (that fact might help explain a few things in both cases). But first keep in mind the fact that evolutionary thinking was making inroads, taking shape, and already affecting the mindset of those who considered themselves to be intellectuals. As societies were all top-down in structure—America’s ongoing experiment excepted—influence always flowed down from the elite, who had the time and money to spend on an education far superior to that of the masses.

**1791: Erasmus Darwin** (1731-1802), British physician-philanderer-poet-inventor publishes a poem that, with the advantage of hindsight, appears to presage the “big bang” hypothesis. Quoted below are the last eight lines of *The Botanic Garden, A Poem in Two Parts*. See for yourself what others have seen:

*Star after star from Heaven’s high arch shall rush,  
Suns sink on suns, and systems systems crush,  
Headlong, extinct, to one dark center fall,  
And Death and Night and Chaos mingle all!  
—Till o’er the wreck, emerging from the storm,  
Immortal Nature lifts her changeful form,  
Mounts from her funeral pyre on wings of flame,  
And soars and shines, another and the same.*

Well, look at Grandpa go! “To one dark center fall.” Can you say, “singularity?” But lest you worry that all will forever go on in black formlessness (“Death-Night-Chaos”), “*Immortal Nature*” will lift her *changeful form* to emerge as Conquering Creator, yielding “*another and the same.*” Seeds of Evillusionary thinking, folks; at the *least*, “big bang” language or not. Along the same lines,

here's another Erasmus Darwin quote from Hunter (*Science's Blind Spot*, p.22):

*The world itself might have been generated, rather than created; that is, it might have been gradually produced from very small beginnings, increasing by the activity of its inherent principles, rather than by a sudden evolution by the whole by the Almighty fiat. What a magnificent idea of the infinite power of the great architect! The Cause of Causes! Parent of Parents! Ens Entium! [prime mover; source] For if we may compare infinities, it would seem to require a greater infinity of power to cause the causes of effects, than to cause the effects themselves.*

The reader may have heard a little bell go off just now, for this is recognizable as more “greater God theology.” There's more enthusiastic cheerleading going on here, perhaps (! times 4), and there's the absurdity of a *greater infinity* —in what universe is *that* possible?—but the general thrust is similar to Burnet's and Ray's. However, this quote from *Zoonomia* (1794) is mild in its evolutionary leanings when compared to others more explicit, like the following quote. It's dripping evolutionary ideas and terminology, though some credit *is* given to THE GREAT FIRST CAUSE, in typical deistic fashion:

*Would it be too bold to imagine, that in the great length of time, since the earth began to exist, perhaps millions of ages before the commencement of the history of mankind, would it be too bold to imagine, that all warm-blooded animals have arisen from one living filament, which THE GREAT FIRST CAUSE endued with animality, with the power of acquiring new parts, attended with new propensities, directed by irritations, sensations, volitions, and associations; and thus possessing the faculty of continuing to improve by its own inherent activity, and of delivering down those improvements by generation to its posterity, world without end! [also from *Zoonomia* ; all-caps emphasis in the original]*

And they call it Darwinian Evolution after *Charles Darwin*?!? Look at all of the components packed into this brief quote: great length of time/millions of ages? —check; *before* mankind?—check; *all* warm-blooded animals *from one* living

“filament” (figurative living thread/literal prototype organism)?—check; with the *power of acquiring new parts* (pre-Lamarck “Lamarckism” and speciation capability)?—check; attended with *new propensities*, *directed by irritations* (recalling Buffon’s environment-caused variation, but adding *volitions*, the *will* to respond, adapt, and change the whole species)?—check, check, check; “thus possessing the *faculty of continuing to improve by its own inherent activity*, and of *delivering down* those improvements *by generation to its posterity*”; is that not Lamarck’s theory in a handy package, “delivered down” by Erasmus Darwin? What’s more, E.D. was making his evolutionary thinking a matter of public knowledge as early as 1770, *89 years before* his grandson, C.D., published his most famous work. And finally, consider what he wrote in his last year of life, in *The Temple of Nature*:

*Organic Life beneath the shoreless waves  
Was born and nursed to Ocean’s pearly caves;  
First forms minute, unseen by spheric glass,  
Move the mud, or pierce the watery mass;  
These, as successive generations bloom,  
New powers acquire, and larger limbs assume;  
Whence countless groups of vegetation spring,  
And breathing realms of fin and feet,  
and wing.* (Tom DeRosa, *Evolution’s Fatal Fruit*, p. 46)

Break it down, reader; it’s all there: when there was nothing but ocean (shoreless waves), the first microscopic life forms (mi-NUTE’ and unseen without the help of a magnifying lens) spontaneously poked through the ooze (through mud and watery mass), reproduced themselves for generations, adding new powers, traits, and physical characteristics—including limbs and larger ones at that—then gave rise to countless forms of vegetation and sea-life (fin), land animals (feet) and the birds (wing). Everything from a single tiny oceanic protoplasm. Sound familiar? And this was in 1802, 7 years before C.D. was born.

Hang on to your hat, but *I* have a “theory” to propose at this point: I seriously doubt that either Jean Lamarck or Charley D came up with anything close

to *original* evolutionary thinking. Then again, *I'm* not the first to suggest that either Lamarck or Charles Darwin—or both—heavily plagiarized Grandpa Darwin (and others like Edward Blyth, for instance, in the case of Charles). If you're doubting me, take another look at these quotes. Combine 'em and ponder what the person who wrote all of them would have in his mind to string those thoughts together and make them public (it's more systematic than a few random shots-from-the-hip!). This business of adding limbs to a cold-blooded fish and producing a warm-blooded cow is sheer nonsense, of course, but it was *Erasmus* Darwin's appearance-based, fantasy system long before it occurred to grandson Charles.

Another thing: I have another hypothesis. What do you suppose are the reasons behind the universal touting of *Charles* Darwin as the “father of evolution,” and the universal downplaying or total ignoring of *Erasmus*? My guess: *Erasmus* acknowledged God (though obliquely, when he called Him “The Great First Cause,” in typical deist fashion) as the Creator who implanted the capabilities in animals that would be manifested in their continual improving, with that “evolution” powered by *direction and volition (WILL)*. Aye, there's the rub! *Evillusion* can't live with God as *any* part of the process, even as the walk-away Beginner-god of deism, and it certainly can't live with *directed* change, because that idea inches us back towards God again. No, they worked and imagined really hard to get rid of God, so He's not gonna get His foot back in the door! *Direction* has to go, and a *non-material will* !....well, that *really* has to go! So up with Charles, and down with *Erasmus*!

Two last related tidbits of possible interest: both “natural selection” and “survival of the fittest” were concepts expressed in the grandfather's writings, though not in those exact words; and the original title of *The Temple of Nature*, published shortly after his death? *The Origin of.....Society*. Boy, that C.D.—what an original genius! Like Joe Biden and “Mr. Internet,” Al Gore! To the contrary, someone who takes over *twenty years* —from 1837 until 1859—to basically copy and cobble-together the ideas of others, adding nothing of substance, is a bit *slow* in my book (as well as a credit-hogging thief).

BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES: Erasmus Darwin should've spent more time reading and studying the Word of God, and less time putting himself out to stud (he fathered at least two daughters outside of his own marriage, and quite likely a third outside of *two* marriages—why I said “philanderer” above). He wouldn't have found the fluffy kind of poetry with which he wooed married women and concubines, but he'd have found 66 books full of solid truth about the universe that *is*, and nothing to support his imaginative and harmful fantasies. This whole march to world-ranging, age-spanning destruction could have been nipped in the bud. Think about *that* ! If all of the evolutionary ideology had been coming only from France, Britain's perennial rival and constant foe, the British could've dismissed such stuff as just more lunatic revolutionary poppycock. As a nation, they might have been able (still) to rediscover the God of the Bible. From that *re*-starting point, Britain could have progressed under God to a much better place.

<<<<<Story-Time Break. Hey, everybody, come here! This'll be fun!>>>>>

**O**nce upon a *pre*-time, long, long, long, ...I mean *l-o-o-o-o-ng* ago... ..

... .. There was nothing. No thing. Whatsoever. Well, ... except the void, that is. There *was* empty space, I guess. But space,...I dunno. Is that something? No. We're gonna say no. Otherwise, this story won't make sense, 'cuz I already told you that there was *nothing*, so how could there be *something*, too? Well, here's how: there just was, okay? There was nothing, and yet there was something, too. Just live with it! Who's telling this story, anyhow?

So anyway, there was nothing but space, right? Then, all of the nothing started to get together at one teensy-weensy pinpoint in space. All of this nothingness crammed itself into a *singularity*. Now I know that's a big word, but trust brainy, big-brained brainiacs as like myself to tell you that, first: that thing was really real, and B: that's what it's called, so deal with it! So anyway again—before I was so rudely interrupted by myself—I was talkin' 'bout the singularity. Well, that exploded. Big-time!!! Bang!!!!!!! went the cosmos! It dashed and pranced and donnered and blitzened in all directions. It was the biggest thing

that had ever happened to the universe, mostly on account of it was the *first* thing of the universe. Awesome, huh?

So that, kids of all ages, totally explains why there's anything at all, and how it all got here. And now you know 'cuz I told ya. This is what us scientists call a FACT. Deal with it. And have a nice day.

<<<<<<<<<<<<< Story-Time Break over. Wasn't that fun? >>>>>>>>>>>>>>>>

Back to reality. Though an evolutionist himself, here's what astronomer Sir Fred Hoyle had to say:

*I have little hesitation in saying that a sickly pall now hangs over the big bang theory.*

*The latest data differ by so much from what theory would suggest as to kill the big-bang cosmologies. But now, because the scientific world is emotionally attracted to the big-bang cosmologies, the data are ignored.* (both quotes, p. 53, *The Illustrated ORIGINS Answer Book*)

*Our highly organized Universe could not have emerged from the big bang, which has no more order than a wet jellyfish.* (quoted by Marcus Chown, 1994; *Journal of Creation*, v8 no2, 1994)

So now you've heard it from another one on the *inside* of the Science Club: the *findings* of science are less important than the *philosophy* of science so-called. These "scientists" are emotionally-attached to pet theories with which they can't bear to part. It doesn't matter that they can't explain a thing. They must not be jettisoned because they're the last line of defense against the foot of God getting in the door. This kind of public confession *really* makes one wonder why a professing Christian like Dr. Hugh Ross would continue to hold this *big-bogus theory* so closely! What doesn't he see that even those who don't start with God can often plainly see?

**1795: James Hutton** (1726-1797), Scottish “Father of Modern Geology” publishes his *two*-volume edition of *Theory of the Earth*, a work that expounds his thoughts that had been first publicly expressed in 1785 and put into print in 1788. It was Hutton’s statement, “from what has actually been, we have data for concluding with regard to that which is to happen thereafter,” that morphed into Lyell’s motto, “the present is the key to the past.” And while Lyell’s name is instantly linked with *uniformitarianism*, it was Hutton who started that concept on its way. What’s meant by that stretched-out term? Simply that all geologic (earth-shaping) processes go on today at the same, *uniform rates* that have always been in place, but over vast, stretched-out ages (“*deep time*”). So Hutton took Buffon’s 75,000 years and raised it *exponentially*. Thousands of years became *millions* or even billions, because that’s the length of time that was estimated to have been necessary to bring the earth into its current form at *never-changing rates* of cyclical deposition and sedimentation (layering of deposits), uplift, and erosion. Hutton saw any number of layers that he thought *had* to have been deposited at the exact same rates and *had* to have gone through *countless cycles* of uplift, erosion, and rebuilding, and he concluded: “...we find no vestige of a beginning,—no prospect of an end.”

Zap! Out went God as The Beginner, the material universe was installed as The Infinite (no beginning, no end), and ever-recycling extreme eons now *impersonally* ruled the history of earth and humanity. Catastrophism (earth-shaping by massive flooding and related vulcanism) was given the boot, though Cuvier later had more to say in its defense. At first, Hutton was viewed as a heretic and denounced as an atheist, though he saw himself as a deist—somehow—and he was noticeably upset by the charges of atheism. [People connected the spiritual dots better than we do today; it calls for a Biblical discernment that we lack.] Noteworthy, too, is that Hutton *also* hinted at natural selection in an agricultural piece.

When he met his Maker in 1797 (only two years after his major work was released, remember), Hutton was in disfavor for the most part, and it remained for Playfair (see his short section at **1802**) to rescue his ideas (his, specifically) from oblivion. Lyell later latched onto uniformitarian/long-ages thinking *big-time*.

[Pun inadvertent, but we'll leave it in there as a reminder.]

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** It should be obvious to the reader that Hutton rejected the Biblical account of **Genesis**. He went so far as to call the Scriptures “questionable Jewish records.” He distrusted and rejected God’s infallible testimony, yet he placed his faith in the fallible—even *mute*—“testimony of the rocks.” **Romans 1**, especially verses **18-23**; **Jer 10:11-16**; **Acts 17:24**; **2 Thes 2:10**; **1 Tim 6:16** (“**who alone has immortality**” whereas the material universe was created, not self-existing from eternity)—any of these passages could’ve helped to set him straight had he possessed any desire to learn from them. But now he *knows* “deep time” and no end to his misery, assuming that he didn’t repent and turn back to the Truth. There’s fair warning for us all.

**PRODUCT PLUG:** For an interesting video treatment of the James Hutton-uniformitarian story, I can recommend *Set in Stone*, a DVD from [truthinscience.org](http://truthinscience.org) (UK). Andrew Snelling, John Whitmore, and Paul Garner tell the story from locations across the United Kingdom, including Siccar Point in Scotland, the famous setting that got Hutton’s wheels turning. See for yourself, however, that the evidence points to catastrophism, and *not* to long-age uniformitarianism. Licensed by TimelessLife, distributed in USA by Randolph Productions Inc.

**1796: Pierre-Simon Laplace** (1749-1827), The “French Newton,” a mathematician-astronomer publishes *Exposition of the System of the Universe*, in which is resurrected (and *perfected*, Laplace would contend) Kant’s **nebular hypothesis**. Not that Kant had faded away; his quasi-religious works, *Religion within the Limits of Reason Alone* (three years prior) and *Perpetual Peace* (one year prior) were still in the European air, so to speak. But Laplace put more astronomical meat on the idea that the solar system as we now know it began “as a spinning blob of white-hot matter” (Taylor, *In The Minds Of Men*, page 292). Then, by “purely natural progressive condensation [the solar atmosphere] had produced rings, like Saturn’s, which eventually coalesced to form planets.” (online article by Dr. Terry Mortenson, cited in Bibliography). So Laplace dogmatically taught (remember, “*Exposition of ...*” not “theory of” like his predecessors; he was more adamant)

that all of the planets broke off from the nebulae (gas-clouds) that had condensed into sun-rings and spun off—one by one, through vast ages (there they are again!)—to take their respective places in the sun’s orbit. Like Hutton, Laplace seems to have been a deist-atheist fence-sitter; there are quotes in support of both sides of that discussion. Regardless, like Hutton, he attempted to explain all in completely naturalistic terms; that is, *without God*, but *with* undirected impersonal forces rolling on through timeless time, with chemicals as creator-kings.

Some last bits of historical context: the French Revolution/Reign of Terror had only recently ended (Laplace had gotten outta Dodge when that was going on; *that* was a good idea!); Spain declared war (again) on Britain; George Washington was turning over his presidency—in a *peaceful* transition, unlike France—to John Adams; note well the contrasts. America, under God-fearing men like Washington, Samuel Adams, Patrick Henry, and Rev. John Witherspoon, was prospering in peace, while increasingly godless Europe was constantly at war, regressing morally and economically. It’s not a coincidence, a quirk of blind fate, or just the way the evolutionary ball bounced. *With* God, truth, progress, peace and hope are available. *Without* God, expect lies, regression, war, and misery.

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** Laplace had been raised as a Roman Catholic, and he’d even studied for the priesthood, but with limited access to the Bible and responsible exegesis in that Romish atmosphere, it makes one wonder how much time he spent in an effort to understand what *Scripture* taught. Following Descartes, it seems he didn’t have much use for thought that didn’t originate in his own mind, or for authority outside of himself. His pride, too, got in *his* way; a regular reading of **Proverbs** (especially **1:7, 8:13, 9:10, 11:2, 13:10, 14:3, 16:18, 29:23**) could have cleared up his nebular thinking and brought true light.

**1798: Thomas Robert Malthus** (1766-1834), British cleric-scholar publishes *An Essay on the Principle of Population*. The main thrust is that the faster-growing *human* population would *inevitably* outstrip the more stagnant supply of resources, especially food, and push the world into an unavoidable **Malthusian catastrophe** when famine and disease would take a devastating toll. In short,

the demand would *unalterably* outstrip supply (increased production and availability were not part of his considerations). Malthusian proponents abound even today, with the Ehrlichs and their ilk at the top of that particular “intellectual” food chain. But for our purposes in this work, we need to recognize in the writings of Malthus that which Charles Darwin saw: Hold on! This could be applied to *all* living organisms; after all, limited resources must *necessarily* dwindle in *any* local population—human *or* animal—where the strongest and most well-adapted (the fittest) will necessarily dominate and reproduce more effectively.

So Darwin, who never met a dead man’s theory that he couldn’t make out to be his own (Malthus had been gone for 25 years when Darwin wrote *Origin*) took the Malthusian football and ran with it. How do I know? Well, extending convenient generosity to one particular dead man, I’m just taking C.D. at his word. Darwin himself contended that he mainly got the idea for his “survival of the fittest” theme from Malthus—“*struggle for existence*” (his co-theorist/rival, Alfred Wallace, also read Malthus and was similarly impressed). Darwin may have gone out of his way to point to Malthus in an effort to point *away* from his Grandpa, Lamarck, Blyth, or Herbert Spencer (who coined the exact phrase that endures), and not so much to credit Malthus. But, like I say, that’s what *he* said. Apparently, then, Malthus did influence Darwin in a central aspect of his thinking, and the damage he’s done through his influence on too many others down through the several successive decades is quite significant.

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** The “Reverend” Malthus should’ve allowed Providence a place in his scheme, and then scarcity, panic, and widespread destruction would *not* have been seen as inevitable and unalterable, since the *living* God exists, able and willing to provide for His creatures. Witness the literally hundreds of Biblical instances of God’s active providential work in preserving individuals and nations from harm, disaster, and destruction, causing them to survive, thrive, and move forward in knowledge and technology. He gives us new discoveries and ways of increasing productivity, *extending* resources, creating new sources of supplies and replenishing old ones; humans as *productive assets*, not just reproductive drains on society. *God* doesn’t ever run out of resources, so He’s always able to supply them as and when He wills, and to whom He wills. The surest path to

human progress is the path of faithful dependence upon God and faithful observance of our duty to fellow humans. God will provide. Man proposes, but God disposes (see **Prov 16:9, 19:21; Jer 10:23**); ours is only to obey.

**1802: John Playfair** (1748-1819), Scottish mathematician-professor-scientist publishes *Illustration of the Huttonian Theory* in an effort to basically translate Hutton for the masses and rescue his reputation (by downplaying his atheistic tendencies). For about seven years, Hutton's work had been largely ignored, and it especially hadn't gained traction with the general public. That's where Playfair got involved. He toned down Hutton's deism-atheism, suggested that the "tranquil flood" in Noah's day that Hutton had posited may have actually occurred (with minimal effect), compared his cyclical uniformitarian theory to Isaac Newton's system of precise, regular planetary motion, and maintained that long ages were *not* unbiblical because the Bible detailed *mankind's* history, but not the universe's. [Once again we see the danger of not taking God at His word when He clearly emphasized and reiterated a Creation period accomplished in six literal days; *for* six ordinary days He created; *within* six days total, literally] Lastly, he brought back the ol' "Greater God" contention that a one-off instantaneous creation didn't tend to encourage a "properly worshipful attitude" as effectively as Hutton's uniformitarianism.

Playfair's defense and promotion of Hutton's long-age, non-catastrophic uniformitarianism was entirely successful with regard to one Charles Lyell (as we'll see later), so he's included as a vital link in this chain of death.

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** Here we have a son of a Christian pastor in largely-Christian Scotland defending, agreeing with, and promoting a deist-atheist who played fast and loose with the Scriptures that he regarded as—once again—questionable Jewish records. Why? What would drive him to do such a disservice to humanity and to the God and only Savior of mankind? It's enough to make a believer weep. You, Mr. Playfair, should have known better. **"To the law and to the testimony! If they do not speak according to this word, it is because there is no light in them"** Isa 8:20 (NKJV). In other words, compare every assertion of men with God's unfailing Testimony of Truth. If God's

Testimony is that He **made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and *all that is in them*** in six days, well guess what? That’s just the way that it happened.

If your assertions don’t line up with that, they fall flat in the dust, false and defeated, prostrate before the LORD, like Dagon (**1 Sam 5**). Your ideas lose. If you speculate that the worldwide flood of over a year’s duration was of a tranquil nature (a *tranquil* flood is utter nonsense and an oxymoron to begin with), but God’s Word says it was devastating *worldwide* and an event of ...well,... *Biblical proportions* (it’s where we get the phrase, folks), you can be sure that your idea is bogus; there’s no light in that assertion. And *don’t* go back to the drawing board of speculation, but back to Eternal Truth.

Last hints: **Matt 24:37-39 & Luke 17:26-27**; in these parallel passages, the Lord Jesus Himself confirms both the historicity and the devastation of the flood *in the days of Noah*, when *the flood came and took them all away/destroyed them all*. From this we see that the flood may have been tranquil, but only *after* it had violently scoured the earth and removed all life not preserved in the Ark.

**1804: Thomas Chalmers** (1780-1847), Scottish *minister*-professor-political economist presents his “**gap theory**”—an “innovative” interpretation of **Gen 1:1-2**—to his congregation in a sermon (note that he could be at most 24 years of age at the time). He would go on to be called both “father of modern sociology” and “Scotland’s greatest nineteenth-century churchman.” Pretty heady stuff for one man. But both of those titles were given to him by people who saw him as one of their own, as a man of the world, and not so much as a man of God who must be held responsible for serious harm done to *Christ’s* church:

**Do you not know that friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever therefore wants to be friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God. Jas. 4:4 (NKJV)**

Here’s the problem with this man, who—it should also be said—founded the Free Church of Scotland. *In direct violation* of the injunctions in **Deut 4:2, 12:32, Prov 30:5-6**, and **Rev 22:18**, he *added to the words of God*, and that’s not a light

transgression (**God will add to him the plagues that are written in this book**, says **Rev 22:18**). Now, if someone wants to pin down the plagues that are referred to in this verse, I suggest to that person a close reading of **Rev 9, 11, 15, 16, 18, and 21**, where the plagues of that *specific* book are described. However, it's possible that the plagues of *all* of Scripture are meant, since **Rev 22** is the *last* word on God's written Word. In any case, the plague-*ees* are not in a position to pick between choices of plagues, and none of the punishments are light; God's just punishment—apart from grace extended through the person and work of Christ—always comes as promised.

Only once in the pages of God's Word do we see an exception. When David knew he'd seriously erred in the matter of taking a national census, exposing his personal pride, the LORD actually gave him a choice between three devastating punishments (see **1 Chr 21**). David *wisely* let the LORD decide, as he counted on His mercy, but the promised punishment of the LORD's choice still came (**1 Chr 21:14**).

**Please let me fall into the hand of the LORD, for His mercies are very great; but do not let me fall into the hand of man.**  
**1 Chr 21:13 (NKJV)**

But why do I make this small detour? Well, I hope we all remember these three things; 1) Adding to/reading into God's Word is an egregious sin; God doesn't—He *can't*—just ignore it or laugh it off. 2) Sinning against God's Word is equal to sinning against God; the *name of God* is wrapped up in His Word, so they can't be separated 3) God will punish as He has threatened, and unless the only Mediator is your advocate/stand-in/go-between (**1 Tim 2:5**), doom is on the way; the "Sword of Damocles" is an impending *nerf* assault by comparison with impending damnation. [NOTE: This is not to say that *Chalmers* was damned; rather, we have ample reason to believe, because of his most public confession, that he died trusting in Christ alone, and was therefore spared from eternal destruction by God's grace; but still, why tempt God with your unholy dalliances?]

By way of short review of material presented earlier, the “gap/ruin-restoration theory” grew out of a false reading-into (*eisegesis*) of the inspired, inerrant, and infallible text of **Gen 1:1-2**. Remember that the idea of “scientifically-*proven*” long epochs and the earth’s great age were very much “in the air” already in 18th-Century Britain and Continental Europe, and Chalmers thought he’d found a way to reconcile the two *opposing* camps of the religious community and the scientific community; he’d do it by *inserting the long ages* that Science was constantly insisting upon into the Biblical text that Religion had always relied upon. The one place where he thought those eons would fit was between **verses one and two of Genesis**. He thought it was quite possible that the two verses described two *different* creations, with the first creation of the **first verse** having been wiped out—including billions of fossil-producing dead plants, insects, land animals, water creatures, and *near*-humans (pre-Adam “hominids”)—because of a rebellion led by Lucifer (hence, “Lucifer’s Flood/cataclysm”) . Then, much later, with possibly millions or even billions of years intervening, the *second* creation of **verse two** took place (*currently*-observed plant and animal forms and the Adamic, fully-human race). This seemed to be just what the doctors of science *and* theology ordered; both parties could spin things their way. So they *thought*. Chalmers became quite a popular figure, the life of the party, and the great peacemaker. He’s still a hero to the Christ-Belial mixers. But I’m here to tell you that some unsettling facts remain, compromise-partiers.

The ONLY EYEWITNESS SAYS IT HAPPENED DIFFERENTLY, so there’s problem #1; this new theory was *not* inspired (God-breathed), *not* inerrant, and *not* infallible, so there are problems #2, 3, and 4; if God—who has, I should think, a fairly good grasp of Hebrew—had meant for readers of His Word to understand that when He used, through Moses, the word *yom* (Str. 3117), they should understand it to mean *olam* (Str. 5769), why would He risk the confusion (**1 Cor 14:33**)? Especially when *olam* and similar words expressing *long* periods of time and the ancient past (like *qedem*, Str. 6924 or even *rachoq*, Str. 7350) *can* be found elsewhere in the OT, effectively expressing those concepts in context? As a matter of fact, *olam* can be found in **Gen 3:22**, where God *is* talking about the longest of times: *forever* —“*lest he put out his hand and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever.*” (*olam* is the last word here; it’s used

properly in context to convey the intended meaning).

[This might be a good time to pause and consider the fact that God is the ultimate source of *all* language and *all* communication and the capacity to understand *at all*]

Problem #5 has just been pointed out, and here's #6—this “theory” makes hash of the connections to **Ex 20:11** and **31:17** and the statement regarding Adam's age at his death (**Gen 5:5**, recall what was pointed out earlier in chapter 2); think for a moment how this implies that God's grasp of *simple math* is also weak; Problem #7 is similar, since the Chalmers addition results in the subtraction of the explanation for—and timing of—the entrance of suffering, disease, bloodshed, and death into the world (**Gen 3, Rom 5 & 1 Cor 15**), for if Adam was not the first man through whose sin those evils came into the world, and sin, suffering, disease, bloodshed, and death had been around millions of years ago (before God wiped out all life and started over), then not only the Apostle Paul and Moses were liars, but God Himself! (Look at **Gen 3** for God's eyewitness account of what Moses and Paul wrote about; that would be a *HUGE* problem, since it would mean that God could not be God (**Num 23:19; 1 Sam 15:29; Prov 14:5; Titus 1:2, Heb 6:18**). God can't lie and still be God.

Obviously, Chalmers didn't realize what ramifications were there to be faced as a direct consequence of his short-circuited thinking, but they are there nonetheless. We all are guilty of not properly thinking things through to inevitable conclusions, so that's why it's vitally important to receive truth as it's delivered by omniscient God, and then all we have to concern ourselves with is thinking God's thoughts *after* Him, and not *without* Him. A huge difference!

Before we leave the topics of Chalmers and his ultra-damaging gap theory, we need to be aware of at least *five more reasons* for rejecting this line of thinking. The first is not obvious, as it requires a good working knowledge of Biblical Hebrew. The second is similar, though more easily discerned. The others are fairly plain to a reader with common sense. *All* have been pointed out and verified by genuine Christian scholars; none of these first popped into *my* pea brain.

The additional, trustworthy points are;

1. The use of the Hebrew word *waw* (usually, “and” in English) as a *disjunctive* in **Gen 1:2**, indicating a parenthetical or bracketed expression, and as a *consecutive*, indicating *sequence* in **Gen 1:3-31**, rules out a gap in what is clearly a passage of historical narrative
2. The gap-theorist translation, “and the earth *became* without form/formless and void” is forced, fitting neither the context nor the rules of Hebrew syntax; it requires a reader who is prepared in verse 1 to receive an account of The Creation/The Beginning to reverse gears completely and learn that a *prior* creation had gone bad (without any explanation), so God was starting over with another attempt
3. Nowhere in all of Scripture are we told that anything happened *between creations* (plural)
4. If such earth-shattering events such as a Lucifer-led worldwide rebellion of pre-humans and “Lucifer’s Flood” had actually occurred, where is Scripture’s (*God’s*) account of it?
5. If “Lucifer’s Flood/Cataclysm” had indeed resulted in the worldwide destruction of billions of living organisms—which became billions of fossils as silent witnesses to the consequences of provoking God’s wrath against sin—then when God pronounced the *entire creation* (“all”) “*very good*,” (**Gen 1:31**) the Holy God would’ve been including all of the fossils—both the remains and reminders of sin—under “very good” (pleasing to Him) as well; that’s a preposterous notion, and the whole tenor of Scripture militates against it

Let me try to reinforce that fifth point with an illustration that’s scaled *waaaay* down. Suppose you just moved into a new apartment (new to *you*, but not new in terms of existence; it’s had a history). After *re*-decorating it to your own satisfaction, you say, “I like it! It’s all good!” while standing on a very dirty, smelly carpet that’s all lumpy with rotting mice and empty old beer cans underneath.

All good?!? Really?

[As I noted, scaled way down; we can't even begin to imagine God either being so stupid or lying!]

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** Besides the ones already addressed in this section, we might do well to remind one and all of two neighboring passages in **Rom 3:**

**Rom 3:4 (NKJV)...Indeed, let God be true/found true but every man a liar**

**Rom 3:8 (NKJV) And why not say, "Let us do evil that good may come"—as we are slanderously reported and as some affirm that we say**

From what we know to be true about God—that He always speaks the truth and *is* the Truth—and what we know about the inspired Apostle Paul—that he was *zealous* to serve his Master in the uncompromising manner that gives Him due glory and honor—we know that we must honor God's means as well as His ends (purposes). He is sovereign and all-powerful. What He wills *will* be done. His Word *will* go forth and accomplish the purpose for which it has been sent (**Isa 55:11**). But it must be *His* Word, pure and unaltered. God doesn't ever promise to fulfill our seemingly worthy goals with sinful shortcuts or non-biblical compromises. No Biblical promises are attached to those kinds of tactics. We must get this, and stop returning to the vomit (regurgitated lies-**Prov 26:11, 2 Pet 2:22**). Even in a new package, a lie is a lie and leads to death. All Christians should take care not to help the evil-minded God-opposers in any way, no matter how much we want the world to like us. Instead, we should be like Paul, who would've recoiled in horror at any ploy to get the world to like us better as individuals at the expense of God's unchanging truth: "As we are *slanderously* reported (and some affirm) that we say!" No, Paul would do whatever he could to be as all things to all men (**1 Cor 9**), but that always stopped short of sinful deception (doing evil) in order to achieve good. Paul always stood his ground; his feet were firmly planted on the unshifting rock of God's Word. We can do no better than that, and then good *will* come.

**1809: Jean-Baptiste Lamarck** (1744-1829), French naturalist publishes *Zoological Philosophy*, laying out his case for an *organic* (living organism) evolutionary process called *inheritance of acquired characteristics*. His since-discredited system boils down to this: a living organism senses (or even desires) that a change in form would be a helpful or necessary response to its natural environment in order to better survive and propagate; this change is accomplished (by an “adaptive force” inherent in the creature), and the *newly acquired* characteristic/structural improvement can then be passed on to the next generation of the species; eventually, the species undergoes so many *positive* changes—through both the generation of *useful* body parts and the removal of less-beneficial, less-used parts (pattern of *disuse*)—that entirely new species are slowly, gradually formed (cue again the eons of deep time). On paper, this can look somewhat convincing, and the big words lend some credibility, I suppose (for the wide-eyed and gullible, anyway), but take a look at an example in real, practical terms of what Lamarck was suggesting.

The classic illustration is of the giraffe that finds itself in an area where the food-source leaves are *juuust* a bit out of reach, with only the topmost leaves remaining on the branches. It sure would be swell to have a longer neck in a case like that, wouldn't it? Sure! So the giraffe conceives (instincts?) a desire to grow a longer neck, and between some sort of *will* (uh-oh! red flag) and *spontaneous generation*, the neck does inch up and out (just how fast Lamarck didn't say *either*, so we don't know how long *this* giraffe survived on a diet devoid of those leaves); but the targeted food supply is reached, the giraffe reproduces, and Geoff Jr. is born with a neck that has the potential to grow longer than either Mom's or Dad's; his improved neck-length will come in handy someday (if he survives to maturity, of course).

Ridiculous, no? But let's turn our attention to the problem of the nuts and bolts of reproduction to see just how ridiculous this whole concept really is. Three letters, three strikes against it: DNA. Characteristics (traits) are passed on to offspring from parents via the information encoded into the parents' sex cells at *their* respective conceptions; when the sperm fertilized the egg, the structural die was cast. Eventual changes to bodies post-birth that are *not* encoded into that

original, lifelong DNA, can *not* be passed on to another generation. Two well-worn examples, one negative, one positive: 1) A pathetically scrawny child builds a super-strong athletic body through weightlifting and intense training, so that, as an adult, he's a prize-winning specimen; this adult can't pass on—genetically—what he has acquired through arduous efforts (he can guide and similarly influence his son to follow his example, but he can't pass on his megamuscles, an *acquired* characteristic by acts of his will). 2) An adult suffers the loss of a limb because of an accident; offspring of that parent won't be born lacking that limb (a *negative* change in the body of a parent won't translate into that same lack or *acquired* malformity); that's *good* news!

Lamarckism is fairly dead today, except in parts of the world where they still think there *must* be something to it (I've read of a Russian revival in that direction; go figure, but that's where an atheistic tradition leads). Why this oddball scheme couldn't possibly be true is, however, pretty obvious to most thinking people today. This is a *system* of wishful thinking based on the *individual power* of wishful thinking (or instincts). Remember that giraffe and think how little power *you* have to grow, shrink, or reshape your nose, add a tail that could serve as a support or stool, or sprout a third arm to increase your ability to multi-task. Wishing it doesn't make it so. Life does have its inconveniences.

Here's a quick Lamarck "rap sheet": all life linked in a vertical chain or ladder by *alchemy*, what he called the *complexifying force* that drove the *adaptive force* — with the alchemical process of turning something lowly and common into something precious, like turning scrap metal into gold, or a horsefly into a flying horse, driving the creative adaptability of the creature ("better life through chemicals"); use/disuse theory ("use it or lose it" applied to physical components of organisms), which, as some have pointed out, merely translates to an advertisement for exercise; a place for volition (will) on the part of non-rational creatures (self-defeating idea for any evillusionist who's trying to distance himself/herself from *any directed, purposeful system*; where did the instinctual desire and sense of need come from?).

[Darwin, *Charles* Darwin, that is, rejected Lamarck primarily on that basis,

though, as you may recall, his Granddad suggested such a thing before Lamarck, as well as other aspects of Lamarckism; ironically, C.D. himself turned *back* to Lamarckism when he realized—by the time of the 6th edition of *The Origin*—that natural selection wasn't the magic mechanism he'd thought it was.]

Because he wanted to make sure that God was completely excluded from the creative biological process, Lamarck relied upon *spontaneous generation* for everything that couldn't be chalked up to the creature's inherent ability to *eventually* develop new, useful parts (so he relied on *two* helpless fantasy-crutches to do his moving around in the scientific world; if that's *real* science, I'm the *real* killer that OJ Simpson's so intently sought); a thoroughgoing uniformitarian, he rejected catastrophism; rejected the possibility of extinctions of particular species (nah, they just became something else; *that's* why we don't see 'em around anymore in that former form); as if I even need to say it, Lamarck was another supposed deist-atheist fence-straddler (a big club in past days, they're no longer listed as such in the directories, but you may still find them under the heading, *Agnostics*).

When all of his weird, God-evading musings are strung together, you get the “first *coherent* evolutionary theory.” I'm not kidding; that's what Stephen Jay Gould, an atheist evillusionist, called it in a 2002 work. This is the “takes one to know one” principle in action, so we should submit to his assessment, right? On the other hand (by that I mean my *third* hand, recently acquired—I'm so proud), *this* writer does *not* see coherent, does *not* see a plausible theory, and does *not* see truth in any part of it. We differ. Or we *did*. Gould met his Maker and the Truth in AD 2002, and now he *knows* differently. I'm quite sure that Mr. Lamarck is now painfully aware of just how much he got wrong, too.

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** Like his countryman and contemporary, Laplace, Lamarck also was raised as a Catholic and spent time in a Jesuit school, mostly to pacify his father. And like Descartes, Spinoza, and Kant, he also had conflicts with religious authorities, and at times openly displayed his antagonism towards all things religious and towards God Himself. That kind of attitude appealed to Charles Darwin, about a generation later, who praised Lamarck by saying that he

had done “*the eminent service of arousing attention to the probability of all changes in the organic, as well as in the inorganic world, being the result of law, and not of miraculous interposition.*” There it is again, folks: the *law of nature* is in control, and there is no place for the supernatural, miracles, and especially God. Well, I’m here once again to tell you that there is a better way, and for Mr. Use/Disuse, there is some tailor-made advice: *Do use* the Word of God or it will be removed from your grasp; *disuse* will result in permanent loss, life-disfigurement, and damnation. And that’s beyond theory:

**Prov 16:20: He who heeds the word wisely will find good,  
and whoever trusts in the LORD, happy is he**

**Rom 15:4: For whatever things were written before were  
written for our learning, that we through the  
patience/perseverance of the Scriptures might  
have hope**

**2 Tim 3:16: All Scripture is given by inspiration of God,  
and is profitable for instruction/training/  
discipline in righteousness**

**Prov 30:5-6: Every word of God is pure/tested/refined;  
He is a shield to those who put their trust in  
Him. Do not add to His words, lest He rebuke  
you, and you be found a liar (all NKJV)**

**1813: Georges Cuvier** (1769-1832), French naturalist-paleontologist publishes his *Essay on the Theory of the Earth*. While there is a certain amount of good associated with his name, the non-biblical *progressive creationism* school started with him (even though his teachings in that direction may have been widely misinterpreted; see Taylor, especially p. 445, footnotes 15 & 16). Cuvier held that a *series* of catastrophic events (like Noah’s flood, but *as many as 27 prior* to that) had occurred throughout the long ages of earth’s history, and following each of those catastrophes, species went extinct and God specially-created

new species in new areas of the globe. From these observations, two things should already be clear: first, that Cuvier gave *some* credence to the Bible; he acknowledged God as the creator, believed that *The Flood* was historical and global, and was adamantly opposed to both uniformitarian and evolutionary ideas, such as those proposed by Lamarck; second, he nevertheless ***took much liberty in reading into the Biblical text*** several things that just weren't there. He still allowed long ages; age-spanning *progressive* creation well beyond that seventh day upon which God *rested from creating*—*stopped* creating (**Gen 2:3**); added a *series* of floods/cataclysms—again, more than two-dozen— all without any mention in Scripture, even *precluded* by a responsible reading of **Gen 1:1** through **9:15**; and he misread the explanation for the dispersion of people groups in **Gen 10:32-11:9**.

Permit me to elaborate on that last item. Cuvier held that there are three human races (Caucasian/white, Mongolian/yellow, and Ethiopian/black; his terms, people, not mine!). In anticipation of what was to become quite a familiar pattern among “Caucasian” scholars and even theologians, Cuvier claimed Adam and Eve as “whites.” Even though he held that unproven notion—basic genetic principles don't support it—he did manage to retain the Biblically-supported teaching that all humans are descended from that first couple—**Acts 17:26**, and note also that Eve means life/life-giving and Adam called her that “because she was (to be) the mother of *all* living”—**Gen 3:20**. So where did the other two “races” come from? According to Cuvier, they were survivors of one of those great (non-biblical) catastrophes about 5,000 years ago, and they just headed off in different directions. This is just not possible if he's referring to a pre-Noahic flood, since that Genesis Flood destroyed every single human except the eight in the Ark (**Gen 7:21-23**). From those surviving three sons of Noah and their wives proceeded, by natural regeneration, the continuing *race* (singular) of Adam.

The *superficial* differences that we observe in terms of the category of “skin color” are easily explained by isolated gene pools. When the full range of genetic characteristics are available in a population, that full range can be exhibited. However, when a people group becomes isolated—cut off from the *total* gene pool and the full range of possibilities—certain characteristics become fixed

within a narrower, *fractional* range. In genetic terms, information for the amount of *melanin* (the pigment that's mostly responsible for determining human skin's *shade*) is the key factor. If the information for high-melanin content is *lost* to a population, the result will be generations of light-skinned people. Conversely, a *loss* of information for low-melanin content will result in dark-skinned generations. But all it takes for the genetic range to move back toward recovery is a remixing of the “missing” genes and successful reproduction.

We could present to the reader some fairly offensive Cuvier quotes (for the curious, check out his bio on Wikipedia). But Cuvier, who was perceived as a devout Lutheran, and who was actively involved in the Parisian Bible Society (mentioned in that Wiki-bio, too), spoke in the ill-informed language of his contemporaries. Genetics as a field of scientific study was still about a generation away (Mendel's research of 1866) and widespread, revived interest was about two generations away (1900+). That's not said to get him off the hook, but to provide historical context. *However,....* and this is the main point: the Bible explains quite clearly that there is just **ONE HUMAN RACE** and all are descended from Adam *and.... Noah (Gen 5-11)*. Why would any further—entirely speculative—explanation be needed? It's indicative of the kind of trouble you can get into when your first speculation necessitates a second and a third, and on and on. With each new piece of a piecemeal theory comes less credibility and more confusion. And that brings us back to Babel (“confusion”). Had Cuvier just accepted the Word of God as absolutely authoritative on the matter (**Gen 10-11**, where the Table of Nations can be found), he wouldn't have had to construct a tale of his own imagination, and he could've preserved some crucial credibility for those times when he was speaking as a Christian to a largely skeptical world.

With respect to the rest of the good and the bad in his file, let's run through it quickly: GOOD—proved that extinctions do happen—they're not illusory—and fossils *are* remains of organisms that were alive at one time; did much to establish the fields of comparative anatomy (comparing fossils and living counterparts) and vertebrate paleontology; strenuously opposed uniformitarian and evolutionary ideas, and pointed out the fact that any change in an organism's body structure would tend to render it *less* able to survive (*harmful* mutation, not positive/

creative); rightly criticized Lamarck's notion of volition on the part of an animal, "that efforts and desires may engender organs"; his *Principle of the correlation of parts* seems to form the basis for the modern principle of *irreducible complexity* (each correlated part is at all times necessary for survival); due to his strong influence in French academia, he nearly singlehandedly held off evolutionary thinking—having buried Lamarck (literally) and Lamarckism (figuratively, yet decisively)—in his homeland for two generations (*VERY GOOD*); compare that to the overrunning of Britain during the same era; more on this after the Lyell bio-file.

BAD—His ideas on successive special creations—whether or not they were correctly construed—led to the "punctuated equilibrium" hypothesis of evolutionists like Stephen Jay Gould; his three-human-races teaching can easily be taken as polygenism and racism (multiple races with separate origins, not one race clearly descended in its entirety from Adam and Noah); some of his comments will *certainly* be seen as racist by today's standards; his multiple-flood catastro-phism distracts from the centrality and cause of *The Genesis Flood* (resulting in diminished relevance on both counts); whatever he taught or hinted at about multiple creative periods flies in the face of **Genesis**, especially **Gen 2:3**, as well as the rest of Scripture (*e.g.*, **Heb 4:3**—"...although the works were *finished* from the foundation of the world"); while he rebuked long-ages ideas at the front door, he let 'em in through the back door, by postulating that the *last* of the great cataclysms was the worldwide flood in Noah's time, so any number of *previous* similar catastrophes could've occurred in *pre*-history (the same opening that Chalmers provided with his *one* previous cataclysmic ruination).

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** Several have been mentioned above, so a review of those should do. But here, as always, the posture of simply sitting humbly and receptive at the feet of The Master is the best, **for One is our Teacher, the Christ (Matt 23:8-10)**.

**1820: William Buckland** (1784-1856), British theologian-geologist-paleontologist publishes *Vindiciae Geologiae; or the connexion of Geology with Religion explained*, an attempt to vindicate the young science of geology as

compatible with the Biblical record. It's depressing to have to relate how this Anglican "churchman" went from touting geology as a science that fit in with the Scriptural accounts to putting Scripture in the subservient position of having to answer *to* Science. In brief, he initially was an ardent (and popular) proponent of catastrophic flood-geology, even though his system followed Cuvier's progressive creationism leanings, but with much longer time periods than Cuvier had ever *consciously* proposed. Because he tied himself to those long-age concepts while he was simultaneously tethered to the Bible, those two conflicting desires led to his acceptance of the Chalmers gap theory. From there, he moved on towards downplaying the effects of Noah's flood—virtually dismissing it as tranquil, with little geological impact—in his 1836 Bridgewater Treatise. It turns out that his former students (at Oxford, where he lectured), including Charles Lyell (three biofiles down the way), had convinced him to reject his former stance and think more *uniformly*—if you catch the drift—and an embrace of the Louis Agassiz ice-age glaciation theory soon followed. Were long stretches of time involved there, too? You bet!

Buckland's tragic trajectory should be familiar to us by now. In his zeal to be a matchmaker between Science and Religion, he left his first love (for *God*, see **Rev 2:4**). Pursuing knowledge for knowledge's sake, he left the truth behind, and he failed to notice that fact. Just like Chalmers, he was in a position of Christian leadership, but instead of pursuing that godly calling, he capitulated with shameful willingness.

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** If there ever was a learned man who really needed to take another *close* look at **Gen 1:1-2:3**—with the emphasis on *responsible exegesis*—I believe it was Buckland. Here's why: at one time or another, he was a day-age man, a gapper, *and* a progressive creationist; his trifecta/unholy trinity speaks volumes. He bought every view *except* the Biblical one (the framework hypothesis would come out a century later, so he didn't get a chance to dance with that one). A close re-read of **Gen 6-8**, paying attention to the *eyewitness words of God* that describe the powerful nature and year-long(+) duration of the breaking up of the deep and *The Flood* could have been extremely beneficial, too. One more verse is pertinent and poignant: Let not many presume to teach;

they will receive a stricter judgment (**Jas 3:1**). If you're going to teach, get *yourself* to the truth first, *then* others to it as well.

**1823: George Stanley Faber** (1773-1854), British theologian-writer begins to “advocate the day-age view, namely that the days of creation were not literal but figurative of long ages” (per Dr. Terry Mortensen, pamphlet, *Millions of Years and the Downfall of the Christian West* ). I've included Faber in this lineage of lie-abettors for two reasons. First, he was a respected Anglican *churchman* who wrote prolifically and had great influence on many in his day (here we go again!). Second, his *day-age* ideas affected Buckland (as already noted) and the *dispensational* school of unbiblical theology-eschatology that has inflicted so much damage on Christ's church. It's a real shame that this man, who apparently wrote much in defense of Biblical teachings and against idolatry, would end up aiding and abetting both anti-creationism and anti-biblical end-times teachings. Since I haven't personally read *any* of his works (I'll admit that I'm going purely on secondhand information in his case), I have no idea (yet) about what led him in the wrong directions, *away* from the straightforward Biblical account of the Creation, as well as into the labyrinth of an out-of-thin-air, unscriptural scheme such as dispensationalism. So as far as Biblical correctives go, the recommended passages that would've personally helped him to find his way to truth, I just can't say. Lord willing, I may read Faber myself to try to get to the bottom of that.

**1826-1828: John Fleming** (1785-1857), Scottish minister-naturalist-zoologist-geologist publishes writings that have a marked influence on Charles Lyell. Another *churchman* capitulates and misleads; so what else is new? Fleming was one of those—along with Lyell—who changed Buckland's mind, enticing him away from Biblical catastrophism (via Noah's flood) to non-biblical uniformitarianism (including glaciation theory). Fleming did his damage by portraying *The Flood* of all floods as a rather tranquil affair that hardly even disturbed the landscape (reviving an idea first put forth by Swedish botanist Carolus Linnaeus, the second “contribution” by the Swedes). Hence, long ages of gradual uplift-erosion-layering cycles (per Hutton) were all that was left to explain the appearance of the earth's surface. Particularly influential was his *History of British Animals* (1828), which pointed to *climate change* (red flag!) as the cause of the demise of extinct species

now found in fossil form. Well, this all sounded good to Lyell, and off he went!

**1830-1833: Charles Lyell** (1797-1875), Scottish-born British lawyer-geologist publishes his volumes, *Principles of Geology*, textbooks that are still revered and in use today (lamentably). Unlike Darwin, *this* Charles was a *Sir* in the eyes of the British, but *like* Darwin, a *cur* in the eyes of creationists; he did nearly as much damage to the cause of truth. If T.H. Huxley was “Darwin’s Bulldog,” Lyell might well be called “Hutton’s Doberman” and “Darwin’s Didact” (teacher). Moreover, he took over the Hutton-Playfair-Fleming franchise and made it his own (witness the six places in the world and craters on both the moon and Mars that bear his name). Lyell co-opted Hutton’s observation (see his section in these pages) and reworked it into the familiar form, “The present is the key to the past”—just the *opposite* of what God says throughout His Word. But then, that was Lyell. He would sporadically feign regret and mild horror that the Bible was increasingly being abandoned, but his whole life’s work went against the grain of The Testimony (**Isa 8:20**). At the very least, he was disturbingly inconsistent, if not downright dishonest. He wanted both the respect due a man of “devout Christian beliefs” and the acclaim of the Christianity-bashing crowd. In the end, he joined that latter group, as evidenced by his endorsement of Darwin’s “improvement” on Lamarck’s organic evolutionary system in the *tenth* edition of his *Principles of Geology*. He had countered Lamarckism with his proposal of *centres of creation*, a sort of progressive special-creation scheme that represented his attempt to explain species diversity and pockets of habitation, allowing God back in, so to speak (and so he thought).

Even Lyell noted that Darwin’s hypothesis owed much to Lamarck, and he considered Darwinism to be a *modification* of Lamarckism. But we need to remind ourselves that Darwin’s gears really didn’t start to turn until his *HMS Beagle* voyage, when the pupil read the teacher’s *Principles*. The pupil “confessed that the great merit of Lyell’s *Principles* was that it ‘altered the whole tone of one’s mind.’” (Taylor, p. 341). So it’s possible that Lyell’s substantial ego was involved in being stingy with the “credit” (I’d say “blame,” but that’s just me). Did someone mention ego? Look at this quote from a biographer, Roy S. Porter, as cited in Lyell’s Wikipedia article: “Lyell saw himself as ‘*the spiritual saviour of geology, freeing the*

*science from the old dispensation of Moses.*” Enough said? So much for his public image of the reluctant convert to apostasy. In fact, he became the head of a new religious movement, for he was soon called, “the High Priest of Uniformitarianism.” [Isn’t it funny how often secularists invoke religious terminology to elevate one of their own *non*-religious heroes? It’s just one small part of their hypocrisy; so maybe “the High Priest of Hypocrisy” would be just as apt in Lie-well’s case]

Speaking of lies—and the lies that they in turn beget—take a look at what this High Priest passed off (too successfully for too long) as gospel truth. He asked a resident of the Niagara Falls area to estimate the rate that those great falls were receding, due to the massive hydro-erosion. The estimate provided was about 3 feet per year. That wouldn’t work for Lyell, so he figured 1 foot per year and then concluded that the seven-mile basin had been carved out over roughly 35,000 years (5280 feet x 7). This figure, pronounced by this High Priest, became set-in-stone “fact.” Nobody successfully challenged this dogma until more accurate estimates and actual *measurements* followed decades later. And guess what? It turns out that the actual rate of recession is closer to 4 or 5 feet per year, and the resulting math points to an age closer to 7000-9000 years, *even under strict uniformitarian assumptions!* When pre-conceived notions meet shoddy science, you get this kind of arch-deception from the bishops of bull-droppings.

Here’s another clear example of the kind of thing we’re now discussing. In another recommended work, *The Collapse of Evolution*, by Scott M. Huse, pages 63-65 show how uniformitarian explanations for phenomena like the La Brea tar pits and the existence of an estimated *five million* frozen mammoths on the Siberia-Alaska coastline are laughable. With regard to the massive mammoth mystery, Lyell clumsily suggested that the doomed creatures had been “caught in a cold snap while swimming.” [rim shot, please!] Wow! That must’ve been one colossal swim party!!! But regardless of the actual cause of the mammoth *mammoth-cide* (huge, sun-blocking, movement-halting dust storms in the post-flood ice age?), *all* signs point to catastrophe in a very short time frame, and *zero* point to plodding uniformitarianism. Lyell and all of his school are caught flat-footed by it. All *business-as-usual* processes over long spans of time obviously must be ruled out; uningested food has been found *on the tongues* of some of those

mammoths, so whatever happened took place *extremely* quickly and dramatically. Both Lyell and Darwin were mystified and bothered by the dilemma, but neither could offer a reasonable explanation, since they refused to put away their uniformitarian lenses for even a moment.

[Lyell's fumbling-around with his interpretation of catastrophe-speak reminds me of Hilarious Clinton's black-church exclamation, "*That's what I'm talkin' about!*"; not real genuine, is all *I'm* sayin.']

{A **BONUS** DRAMATIC VIGNETTE, SET IN 19TH-CENTURY BRITAIN, WHEREIN WE VIEW...  
A LONE, BRAVE CATASTROPHIST AMIDST THE EXCLUSIVELY-  
UNIFORMITARIAN SET: }

{L. OWEN BRAVESOUL speaking, while moving about in a tight circle, yet rather tentatively: }

Most unfortunatę, that; most unfortunatę. So preponderant a loss of fauna! So many mammoths, alas, so many. And all just out for a jolly good swim on that very day of their collectivę demise! Ah, mę! But wait a tick. Could not a *possible* explanation be that an inundation of muddy, fatal floodwaters engulfed and entombed them? Furthermore, was not such a catastrophe related in Holy Writ? And...say,...! what are you doing, sirs?! I must insist that you unhand mę! Why, I am most astonished at your impetuous and incomprehensiblę lack of cordiality and proper respect for a pęer, and,...what's that? I am *banned* from the Royal Society?! I am never again to darken its door?!? Has civility taken full flight?!? We shall see about this! Indeed, my solicitor shall be most distressed to hear of this affront to my honorable person!

(Bravesoul is rudęly and unceremoniously thrust upon the stręet, and that without e'ęer an apology)

{END VIGNETTE}

Back to reality. Short dramatizations aside, we'll finish with the case against Lyell. Probably the best succinct assessment I've yet seen of the huge effect Lyell has had on geology and the evillusionary worldview is Ian T. Taylor's, found on page 285 of *In the Minds of Men* :

*It is no coincidence, then, that the theory of evolution, as formulated by Darwin and as we subsequently know it today, is founded on Lyell's geology...Lyell's geology is, in turn, based on a device whereby traditional catastrophe became the quiet outworkings of natural processes observable today. That device was the philosophical stretching of time, from a few thousand years, implied by the biblical testimony and engraved on the nineteenth century mind, to an almost open-ended scale, reckoned today in thousands of millions of years. Lyell exploited the impossibility to recapture past events, and once having broken into this virgin ground, it then became a private preserve for his followers and had the convenience of having a sliding scale of time to fit the current theory.*

To me, those words ring oh-so true. With Lyell came the post-Hutton new math: “almost open-ended scale”; he was among the first to throw out a figure of 300 million years or more for the age of the earth, and even though his methodology was sorely lacking in honesty (as we've seen), his word was taken above the very Word of God. When he proposed the mythical *geologic column* (uniform order of simpler to more complex life-forms occurring in the fossil record, something that is *nowhere found on earth*), the faithful followers found a new inviolable tenet, and it has remained in their “scriptures” (without *any* scientific—*observable*—proof). By suggesting that the Noahic flood was confined to the Mesopotamian valley (a *local* flood), he attempted to banish catastrophism as a viable explanation for the geographic features of all other areas; and in that isolated basin where the flood *did* occur, exclusively, according to him, it was so peaceful in its nature that it hardly caused a ripple in the landscape. So the flood passed, for all intents and purposes, into non-existence, a non-entity of “religious” imagination.

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** Compare and contrast. God's universal *general* revelation is neatly encapsulated in **Romans 1**, via **Psalm 19**. It involves both the physical witness of God's creation and the spiritual witness of God's gift of the human conscience. Lyell's universal general revelation was "what we see in nature today has always been; what we see is what we get, and we don't see God." God's *special* Revelation is His Word, the person of Jesus Christ (the fullness of God bodily, **Col 2:9**) and His Word in written form, the Holy Bible. Lyell's special revelation was that there was no need for a creating God, or at least there was no God who stayed around to govern and direct a universe that's always *open* to His *supernatural* interposition. Lyell's message to humanity translated to hopelessness, since it meant that all matter—all that there really is—was slave to nature's unassailable eternal processes, and that has to include humanity. There was no heaven to be hoped for because there was no real God of Heaven. Only one who's sadly lacking in discernment could continue to credit Lyell with being a true Christian.

**So you will again see the difference between the righteous and the wicked, between one who serves God and one who does not serve Him—Mal 3:18 (HCSB)**

**I will honor those who honor Me, but those who despise Me will be disgraced —1 Sam 2:30 (HCSB)**

**Be careful that no one takes you captive through philosophy and vain deceit based on human tradition, based on the elemental forces of the world, and not based on Christ—Col 2:8**

**If anyone thinks he knows anything, he does not yet know it as he ought to know it. But if anyone loves God, he is known by Him—1 Cor 8:2-3 (HCSB)**

**Now if any of you [those known by God] lacks wisdom, he should ask God, who gives to all generously and without criticizing, and it will be given to him—Jas 1:5 (HCSB)**

**God—His way is perfect; the word of the LORD is pure. He is a shield to all who take refuge in Him—2 Sam 22:31**

## 6

### POST- *PRINCIPLES* (1830+)

As mentioned before, while Georges Cuvier's catastrophism-creationism held sway in France for most of the 19th Century (though his system did allow for long ages *before* the first man, Adam), in Great Britain, it was a completely different story. Catastrophism and Biblical creationism were nearly as dead and buried as the fossils. Between 1830 and 1833, when Lyell's volumes, *Principles of Geology*, were brought out in publication,...

—France saw its usual share of political turmoil and shifts in power, but one countryman, Alexis de Tocqueville, was touring America (1831-1832) to get some idea of what had made *that* country so successful so quickly.

—Cuvier died in 1832, but his system and influence ruled French science for decades after.

—Britain saw a change in kings and in the office of Prime Minister (peaceful transitions) and the abolition of slavery throughout the Empire (1833, the year that William Wilberforce, primary anti-slavery champion, died).

—Charles Darwin voyaged to South America and well beyond, returning in 1836 (with him were Lyell's books, at least one of which was added in transit).

—True scientist and true Christian, Michael Faraday, was making big discoveries in electromagnetism, unhindered by evolutionary assumptions.

—Stateside, Americans re-elected Andrew Jackson as president, and south of the border, Mexican president Santa Anna (of Alamo infamy) took over there (1833).

—William Lloyd Garrison had begun publishing his anti-slavery periodical, *The Liberator*.

—In both English and French, *socialism* entered the language (1832, 16 years before the *Communist Manifesto*, and just one year after Friedrich Hegel's death).

So what have we got at this point in time? In contrast to 1779, where we last paused for a look around, we don't find France, Britain, and America warring with each other; that's the good news. However, the great cholera pandemic that had started in 1826 in India had now spread as far as Scotland by 1832. *Not* good news, but not the worst, at least in terms of a *lasting worldwide* effect. That *soul-*destroying pandemic had settled in mostly due south of Scotland, and by now it shouldn't have to be named.

But what I'd like for us to recognize here is that America was flourishing in 1835, when de Tocqueville's *Democracy In America* was released. And before we resume our historical trek further *away* from the Truth, we'd do well to learn from de Tocqueville's observations. Excerpted quotes will fill us in regarding what life can be like, living according to—and under—The Truth, and without the browbeating and spirit-crushing dogma of an evolutionary anti-faith.

On my arrival in the United States the *religious aspect* of the country was the *first thing that struck me*...There are certain populations *in Europe* whose *unbelief is only equaled by their ignorance and debasement*; while in America, one of the freest and most enlightened nations in the world, the people fulfill with fervor all the outward duties of religion...There is no country in the world where the Christian religion retains a greater influence over the souls of men than in America...I sought for the *greatness and genius in America*...Not until I went to the churches of America and heard her *pulpits aflame with righteousness* did I understand the *secret of her genius and power*.

[all emphasis mine]

What that astute observer of national character and human nature concluded should never be forgotten in this land:

“America is great because she is good, and if America ever ceases to be good, America will cease to be great.”

Here's the modern-day follow-up and corollary, usually credited to Ronald Reagan:

“If we ever forget that we are One Nation Under God, then we will be a nation gone under.”

Some lessons should jump off the page. Both speakers were referring to two possible scenarios for the United States. The former recorded his observations of what was the *reality* in 1830's America, and not just a mere possibility. ***Life under God was good.*** The *people* were good because they lived *before the face of God*, consistently conscious of His presence and steeped in His Word. **Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty—2 Cor 3:17.** What the latter speaker foresaw as a distinct possibility in his age—our own—was a nation that first pushed God to the margins of individual and societal consciousness, then virtually forgot God, and finally drowned in a flood of sin and its just consequences. As sparks fly upwards (**Job 5:7**), when humanity tries to go it alone—*atheos*, without God—trouble will inevitably result. We can walk in the dark only so long before we plunge off the edge.

On that relevant note, we rejoin the evil and illusory path to destruction that is evolution.

**1835-1837: Edward Blyth** (1810-1873), British zoologist-ornithologist-museum curator publishes articles that apparently influence Charles Darwin's evolutionary formulations. While many of his ideas—and some of his very words—show up in the *Origin of the Species*, Darwin doesn't see *fit* to credit him publicly for those ideas (he did write that he highly valued his opinion, but stopped there). He even went so far as to take the side of a British Museum curator *against* Blyth when Blyth—as a curator in India—wasn't getting fair cooperation; in what was likely a matter of class-distinctions, Darwin betrayed his *lack* of true class, which became a recognizable pattern for him and his loyal promoters as well. The three articles that helped Darwin see the light (speaking *ironically*, mind you) appeared in *The Magazine of Natural History*, and they touched on both artificial (external breeding) and natural (inbred) selection. Blyth did *not* contend for variations *between* species—the self-creation of *new* species—but

when Alfred Wallace proposed as much in late 1855 (in the same magazine), Blyth seemed to approve, and *he* called it to Darwin's attention as part of their ongoing exchange of letters. Remember, that was within four years of Darwin's big splash, and at a minimum, he and his circle of admirers had been tipped off that someone else had been connecting the same dots along the same lines. Direct or conscious plagiarism on the part of Darwin has been refuted, but I'm still convinced—along with many well-informed others before me—that the line of descent for “Darwin's theory” runs roughly from Buffon to *Erasmus* Darwin to Lamarck to Lyell to Blyth to Wallace to Charles Darwin. C.D. just combined the ingredients already at hand and called it all his personal creation (“*my* theory”). Blyth, a creationist, was used as an unwitting dupe. He was a lamb among wolves.

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** Blyth, to his credit, held to variations *within* the Biblical *kinds*—he used the term *archetypes*—but he didn't believe in transformations from one species to another one entirely. That is, not until Wallace's paper in 1855, anyway, but what he held at the time of his death is hard to gauge, since he suffered a mental breakdown in 1865. He was confined to a private asylum; later he took to drinking, and he died in 1873 of heart disease. He was *not* buried in Westminster Abbey. It seems that Blyth was always on the underside looking up or on the outside looking in, but his close study of nature, especially his beloved birds, should have been a source of constant and consistent reminders that all of the wonders of science require a super-intelligent Creator and Giver of Knowledge. If there are borders between kinds (or archetypes, it doesn't matter which term is used), then Who put 'em there? *All* of the easily-discerned and observed patterns of nature are obviously ordered by a transcendent Being who *had* to precede all else; order is undeniably there, and order can't order itself. For anyone seeking to explain the order that is there, they must begin with the God who is there, and He has not left Himself without a witness (**Acts 14:17; 1 Jn 5:9-13**).

**1836: The Bridgewater Treatises** are completed, concluding a series of eight commissioned and paid for by the estate of the Earl of Bridgewater. Seven scientists and one theologian received 1000 pounds each—a nice sum—for particular contributions on the theme, “On the Power, Wisdom and Goodness of God, as

manifested in the Creation.” For the most part, the theme was only lightly touched upon, references to God’s Word were few and far between, and Science was exalted as much as the Creator. It seems to me that the Earl didn’t get his money’s worth in that regard. The most well-known and most-discussed of these treatises was by William Buckland (we glanced at him several pages back) entitled, *Geology and Mineralogy considered with reference to Natural Theology*. Here’s a quote from that work:

*The myriads of petrified Remains which are disclosed by the researches of Geology all tend to prove that our Planet has been occupied in times preceding the Creation of the Human Race, by extinct species of Animals and Vegetables...*

Okay, let’s break this down a bit. We see that Geology is the primary source of knowledge, and fossil evidence and research—not anything from God’s Word—are the provers-in-chief. Everything is now to be tried in the Court of Naturalism, where anything *supernatural* is inadmissible evidence (recall that this goes all the way back to Descartes). Next we see what Geology, in its magisterial role, has to say, over and against Scripture: our planet existed well before Adam was

created, so there was plenty of time for those “myriads of petrified Remains” to accumulate, as boatloads of animal and plant species appeared on the scene, only to go extinct. In summary of just these few words, we see that Buckland 1) elevated the findings of science to a level higher than God’s Word; 2) ignored God’s inerrant and infallible exclusive eyewitness testimony of how the planets, plants, animals, and humanity all got their start (in the same *week!*); 3) injected extra-biblical “times” *preceding the Creation* (**Gen 1:1**) into the inspired account of *The Beginning*; and 4) put the *results* of The Curse (**Gen 3**) *before* The Curse, and even *before the Creation!* (**Gen 1&2**). That all adds up to some very serious trifling with the text of God’s Word. It looks like the Earl’s heirs should’ve given Buckland (and others, to be fair) an “F” on his paper, or at least called for a “do-over” that would better stick to the assignment. Only *then* should he have been paid.

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** I haven't mentioned this up to now, but there's *still more* solid evidence that God did in fact create over the course of six ordinary days. God Himself provides it, as it comes from the very lips of Jesus: **Have you not read that He who made them** [the first male and the first female] **AT THE BEGINNING made them male and female (Matt 19:4 ; Mark 10:6—FROM THE BEGINNING)**. Clearly, the human race got its start *at the beginning /from the beginning* , concurrent with everything else in one seven-day week. The inspired Apostle Paul also confirms this in **Rom 1:20**, when he writes that *since the creation of the world , God's attributes have been seen and understood*. In order for God's attributes to have been *seen and understood since the creation*, there had to be humans to do the seeing and understanding at the beginning of creation. This should go without saying, but the point is easily missed: man was there in the beginning week. If human beings *eventually* joined the "great chain of being," neither Jesus or Paul were warranted in saying that humans had been there from the start. Since Jesus (God) can't lie and neither could Paul when under the inspiration of The Holy Spirit (God), we know that humans—Adam and Eve in particular—were there within the very first week of earth's history, the Creation Week.

## 2 EXCELLENT, CONCISE SUMMATIONS OF PRIMARY BIBLICAL CREATIONIST POSITIONS

These are the words of an admirable Christian writer-scientist-apologist, Dr. Jonathan Sarfati. They're found on page 21 of his *Refuting Evolution 2* (2002; see more info in Bibliography).

*We base our science on the biblical framework of history, which provides much information about when and how the Designer performed special acts of design. That is, during creation week about 6,000 years ago, He created distinct kinds of creatures. Shortly after that, Adam sinned and brought death and mutations into the world. About 1,500 years later, God judged the world by a global flood that produced most of the world's fossils. But two of every kind of land vertebrate (seven of the few "clean" ones and birds)*

*were rescued on an ocean-liner-sized ark. After they landed on the mountains of Ararat, the ark animals migrated and diversified, adapting to different environments—including some speciation. Mankind disobeyed God’s command to fill the earth, and migrated only when God confused the languages at Babel about 100 years later. This explains why human fossils are higher in the post-flood fossil record than other mammals.*

[2025 ADDITION]: As much as I value Dr. Sarfati’s ability to put his logical thinking into clear, succinct passages like the foregoing, I must take issue with one word in particular: “*global*.” I’m not in any way disagreeing that the flood in Noah’s time *was* all-encompassing, but I’d use the word “worldwide” rather than “*global*.” Here’s why: In recent years, based on a preponderance of unassailable historical, scientific, and *Biblical* evidence, I’ve come to believe that rather than all of humanity living on an *always-rounding* (ever-*arc*ing, by *sheer definition*) “globe” or “sphere” or “ball” earth, we do indeed live on what many will call a “flat earth.” I’ll make no apologies for calling it a ***topographical plane*** or ***Flat/ True Earth***.

The second concise summary—this one on how miracles are to be viewed—is from Louis Berkhof’s *Systematic Theology* (see Bibliography), p.177.

*There is undoubtedly a certain uniformity in nature; there are laws controlling the operation of second causes in the physical world. But let us remember that these merely represent God’s usual method of working in nature. It is His good pleasure to work in an orderly way and through secondary causes. But this does not mean that He cannot depart from the established order, and cannot produce an extraordinary effect, which does not result from natural causes, by a single volition, if He deems it desirable for the end in view. When God works miracles, He produces extraordinary effects in a supernatural way. This means that miracles are above nature....When a miracle is performed the laws of nature are not violated, but superceded at a particular point by a higher manifestation of the will of God. The forces of nature are not annihilated or suspended, but are only counteracted at a particular point by a force superior to the powers of nature.*

The Biblical view is: God’s universe is well-ordered, but *open* to His *supernatural superceding*, too.

**1837 Louis Agassiz** (1807-1873) Swiss biologist-geologist-physician is “the first to scientifically propose that the Earth had been subject to a past ice age.” (from his bio-article on Wikipedia, p. 4). The legacy of Agassiz, like Cuvier’s, is a mixed bag of contributions *toward* and distractions *from* true science. It’s not surprising that Agassiz resembled Cuvier in certain respects because he was tutored by Cuvier for a period of time in Paris, where he was put on the path of zoological study. In 1840, Agassiz published his two-volume work, *Study on Glaciers*, and that really got the subject rolling through the regions of the earth, from Europe and Britain to America. Of course, since glaciers move ever-so-slowly and predictably—*uniformly*, one might say—the earth’s age had to be stretched some more to allow for all of the earth-shaping that glaciation had supposedly accomplished. It’s worth noting again that the worldwide Noahic flood had been, in the minds of many, reduced to an inconsequential (and likely *local*) flood; Agassiz, too, thought it was a local event. That left much to be explained by strictly uniformitarian processes taking place over huge expanses of time.

Well, even a mythical pre-Adamite could see that glaciation went hand-in-glove with that kind of thinking. The Science Club’s doors were flung wide open to him (*e.g.*, the Geological Society of London and the Royal Swedish Academy of Sciences), and when he traveled to study and give lectures in America (1846), he ended up staying there for the rest of his life (two field trips to South America excepted). From 1847 onward, he was a fixture at Harvard, as well as a major influence on scientific and religious beliefs in this country. His tarnished legacy today is the result of two aspects of his teaching. For the Christian, young-earth creationist or not, his Unitarianism and racist-leanings are unacceptable. For the scientifically-minded secularist, only the latter is the problem. These days, his name is being removed from public view wherever political correctness prevails. What did he say that was worthy of disdain by Christians *and* Christian-bashers? Whether Cuvier held to today’s type of progressive creationism is debatable, but in the case of Agassiz, it’s not; he taught that there are *nine* races (*really* plural, Cuvier’s three *squared*). As a lifelong opponent of evolutionary systems, Agassiz

held that God had created all life on earth—perpetuated by natural regeneration—so the apparently different races had to have been created by God *progressively* in various times and places. This is *polygenism* (multiple beginnings). It's non-biblical, of course, because the Bible openly teaches *monogenism* (**ONE HUMAN RACE**). This is another powerful illustration of how one can get into deep trouble with any step away from the truth of God's Word. Though he saw himself as somebody who respected and honored God at every turn, he often turned away from the Template of Truth, so he ended up dishonoring the God of the Bible in many ways.

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** Unitarianism is blown out of the water by the **gospel of John**. Throughout that entire book runs the theme of the necessity of honoring, worshiping, and serving the *Son of God* in order to likewise acknowledge *God the Father*. **He who honors not the Son honors not the Father—John 5:22-24**. Uniformitarianism is not supported by Scripture either, and Agassiz inconsistently held to both special creation *and* the long ages required for ultra-massive earth-shaping by glaciation. This is not to say that glaciation didn't occur—we still see it occurring in our day—but to give it such a prominent geo-historical role, at the expense of the Bible's worldwide and uniquely-historical *Flood of all floods*, is to substitute bare speculation for known truth. **Gen 6-9** gives as many details as we *need* to know about how our earth was principally reshaped. **Gen 10-11** gives us the outline for the dispersion of the people-groups that have gone on to inhabit diverse areas, isolating and reducing gene pools by degrees. Keeping that in mind would've prevented Agassiz from his odd teaching that all men were related as a *species*—just like the animals and plants—in a *design* concept in the mind of God, but not through actual *biological descent* from Noah, and on back to Adam. Agassiz *did* teach the spiritual unity of all humans, but he also stressed physical and *qualitative* differences in attributes. That's what is most disturbing today, especially when it's considered that he thought the **Gen 1-2** creation account applied to the *white* "race" only. As previously noted, this line of thinking clicked right into place in the scientific-religious circles of the mid-19th Century. Agassiz shouldn't be categorized as an overt racist, but his non-biblical reworking of the genealogy of humanity certainly implied a step or two in that direction. And that's all the enemies of truth ever need. They'll turn your

unintentional, misplaced step or two into a group-sprint in the wrong direction, dragging you by the collar if that's what it takes. Agassiz could have used his zeal for learning and teaching to help build both the body of scientific knowledge and the body of Christ. Had he recognized Christ as the very reason for the universe's existence—**All things were created through Him AND FOR HIM, Col 1:16**—he could've done great and lasting good for Christ's kingdom. But because he relied too much on speculation that wasn't even good science, he stumbled.

**1837-1839: Rev Dr John Pye-Smith** (1774-1851), British Congregationalist theologian and tutor publishes works that attempt to reconcile geology with the Bible [*deja vu*, anyone?]. The title of his 1839 piece, *On The Relation Between the Holy Scriptures and Some Parts of Geological Science*, sums up his thrust. His method of “reconciliation” included more downgrading of the worldwide mega-flood to a local affair confined to the Mesopotamian Valley, roughly where Iraq is situated today. As evidenced in the creationist classic, *The Genesis Flood*, Pye-Smith's tone is often *mocking* when referring to the Biblical account. He seems to brand as dolts anyone who would be so naive as to receive God's Word as written; the light of SCIENCE was necessary to illuminate all. Here are two samples of what I'm talking about, found on pages 107 & 108 of the *50th Anniversary Edition of The Genesis Flood* (quotes are from one of Pye-Smith's biographers, John Hamilton Davies):

*Relying on EVIDENCE, the only valuable ally in scientific investigation, our author arrived at the conclusion...that the Noachian deluge was not, and could not have been, universal; and that the affirmation could not be maintained, except by the wretched subterfuge of supposing a stupendous miracle throughout the whole continuance of that Deluge.*[caps in original]

[Note the condescending tone and terminology throughout]

*Undaunted either by the insinuations or by the outcry of those who were sceptical of the facts of science, Dr. Smith, with yet louder voice,*

*maintained for geology a perfect harmony both with Scripture and with reason; and those sentiments which, at their first publication, caused alarm in some quarters, are now admitted and familiar truths with all but those who, with narrowmindedness and bigotry, “love the darkness” of ignorance “rather than the light” of knowledge.*

[We can reasonably assume that the quote marks around the two phrases in the last sentence indicate either the exact words of Pye-Smith or a less-than-reverent, turned-around reference to **John 3:19**; either way, Pye-Smith’s true piety becomes suspect, as does his biographer’s; God made the light and the darkness and He defines them both—over, above, and when necessary, *against* so-called science, His mere servant—**1 Tim 6:20**]

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** This is probably a good time to state clearly what has been at issue from the time that uniformitarian principles were first proposed by Hutton, Playfair, Fleming, Lyell, and all the rest. We’ll turn once again to *The Genesis Flood* by Whitcomb and Morris, p. 114:

*The Biblical doctrine of the Flood cannot be harmonized with the uniformitarian theories of geology.*

If the above statement is true, and I firmly believe that it is, then all of the efforts made in the attempt to harmonize the two *opposing* systems have been misdirected and made in vain. They gained nothing for the advancement of truth and instead, much was done to distract from that worthy cause. What’s worse is that the buriers of the truth—conscious enemies of truth that they simply could not accept—found themselves aided by those who supposedly had taken vows to **preach and teach The Truth in all times and seasons, convincing, rebuking, and exhorting with patience (2 Tim 4:2)**. And once again, all who take on the responsibility of teaching take on a greater culpability as well (**Jas 3:1**), so they’d better get it right! Worst of all, true believers in the Triune God of the Bible do not ignore, belittle, or trash God’s Word! We can either take God at His word or be taken to the cleaners. **God’s universe, God’s rules, God’s Truth**. You simply can’t play games with God and win.

**1841: Hugh Miller** (1802-1856), Scottish geologist-writer publishes *The Old Red Sandstone*, a work that further cements the false notion of mandatory long-age antiquity of the earth. The title became a sort of code-word for certain supposed geological epochs, and another of his titles, *The Testimony of the Rocks*, has become almost a banner/motto for secular geologists (over and against the Testimony of The Word—**Isa 8:20; John 3:31-34, 5:34; Rev 1:2, 9, 12:17, 19:9-10, etc.**).

Miller's story is about as tragic as can be. He was popular and thought to be an exemplary Christian, so he certainly had a wide circle of influence. But he had a hard time deciding just how to fit the "fact" of deep time into Scriptures that didn't mention them or even hint at them. At first, the gap/ruin-restoration theory of Chalmers seemed the best bet. But he rejected that, moving to a day-age theory that proposed there had been *both* six thousand-year days in the *actual creation* (per **2 Pet 3:8**) and six literal, ordinary days in the *telling of the story* to Moses (God's relating of His exclusive eyewitness testimony to Moses, so that he could enter an outline of it into the Biblical record). An odd attempt at compromise, it satisfied no one and sacrificed truth. He also embraced the local-flood teachings of Pye-Smith and others, so it's clear that his presuppositions were formed and driven by geology, not by the Template of Truth. It's telling and ironic that on the night in which he committed suicide by shooting himself, he'd just finished checking printers' proofs for *The Testimony of the Rocks*.

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** I most certainly do not want to dump on Hugh Miller, for he wrote some wonderful things about the God who testified of Himself through His ever-living Word, Jesus Christ (**John 1, Rev 1 & 19**) and His written Word, the Holy Bible. *The Foot-Prints of the Creator* (1850) and *The headship of Christ and The rights of the Christian people* (published posthumously, 1860) both point to an evangelical faith. But he did go wrong, and he did end wrong, even if he was convinced that his severe bouts with depression would lead him to harm his family (the possible motivation for taking his own life). His study of the rocks may have displaced his *essential* study of the Creator and *The Testimony of The Rock* (**Deut 32; several Psalms; 1 Cor 10:4**).

**1844: Robert Chambers** (1801-1871), Scottish publisher-writer-geologist has his *Vestiges of the Natural History of Creation* published *anonymously*. More precisely, his brother published it without attaching the author's name in order to protect him from the expected backlash; the backlash *did* ensue. That Robert Chambers was the author of the work was widely suspected, but it wasn't revealed until after his death. Why the careful secrecy and chicanery? Even though evolutionary thought was gaining ground in secular intellectual circles in the British Isles, there were sufficient vestiges of *faith* among mainstream theologians and their flocks to hold the Biblical/near-biblical line. So when Chambers came out with his atheistic ideas of stellar (stars and planets) evolution *and* the transmutational evolution of species, changing from one species to another, he was perceived as lobbing bombs in from the fringe (with good reason, I must say). Take note of that date: it's just 15 years before Darwin's blockbuster. Charles Darwin benefited from all of these developments along our timeline because each of them softened public resistance to "his" radical ideas by getting out there first and taking the brunt of the attacks.

Don't get me wrong; I'm not defending Chambers in order to trash Darwin. *Both* names deserve to live in infamy as determined God-opposers. Chambers knew what he was doing, and he laid out his intentions in the last chapter of his book, writing, "The book, as far as I am aware, is the first attempt to connect the natural sciences in a history of creation." In other words, he was trying to pull together the *two types of science* —operational/experimental/working science and philosophical/speculative/origins science—*and* the various fields of science, like the growing fields of geology and paleontology; the **first attempt toward a unified field theory of science** (to use today's terminology). And all of this had to fit under the umbrella of *completely naturalistic* explanations (again, the basic rule ever since Descartes). God was nowhere to be seen in his system. However, that didn't bother many Quakers and Unitarians; his theorizing made sense to them, more so than other "sects." *Somebody* was buying the theories and the book; it went through *ten* editions in a decade.

When Chambers did refer to the creator, it was along the lines of "a deity" or the "Creative Power," and in the context of mocking special individualized creations

for the various species. He basically used the “better God” arguments of the theological naturalists to re-define God as a god more to the liking of the atheisticly-minded. After some of the initial uproar died down, it became increasingly acceptable among the intellectual/upper class to openly discuss and even hold such radical evolutionary ideas. Chambers’ bombs apparently found their targets, and ol’ C.D. himself later tipped his hat to him (somewhat).

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** For all the publishing he and his brother William did, and considering that for Robert, “the acquisition of knowledge was with him the highest of earthly enjoyments,” you’d think that some Bible reading could’ve been mixed into his search for valuable writings and trustworthy knowledge. But it’s apparent that God’s Word held little charm for him, so, like too many others, he missed the trailhead that leads to essential, true knowledge: **Psa 111:10; Prov 1:7, 9:10; 2 Tim 3:16**. If he could have humbled himself enough to learn from the Source of all knowledge, he could have outpaced his wild speculations—which were even seen by secularists as very poor and absurd “science”—and walked steadfastly in and towards the Light (**Gen 1:3; Psa 119:105 & 130; Isa 2:5, 8:20, 60:19-20; Luke 2:32; John 1, 3, 8, 12; 2 Cor 4; Eph 5; Jas 1:17; 1 Jn 1:1-2; Rev 21:23**). Since God created and governs both the darkness and the light (**Gen 1:1-3; Isa 45:7**), He can leave you to your own devices in a fruitless slog in the dark, or He can gloriously illuminate your soul and the sure path to truth and bliss. Each of us can learn from the bad example of Chambers: we must trust in God, not man—**Psa 118:8**.

**1844: Adam Sedgwick** (1785-1873), British geologist-theological naturalist-professor defends current geology’s assumptions, including undefined vast stretches of time, in a speech to the British Association for the Advancement of Science. In doing so, he indeed advances “science,” but “sells out” the Scriptures. So, like Cuvier, his is a mixed legacy at best. On the one hand, he staunchly opposed evillusionary hypotheses, favoring instead a Cuvier-type—but more extensive—series of catastrophes and successive creations (a *definite* progressive creationism, though non-biblical in itself). On the other hand, what he came to believe and what he taught in the end were a far cry from the simple Scriptural reality of **Gen 1-11**. Here was yet another supposed *defender* of God’s Word who

had in fact largely abandoned its clear teachings: *one* Creation event lasting six ordinary days; the *one* event that was responsible for the origins of the heavens, the earth, and everything in them; *one* major, worldwide Flood of *literally Biblical proportions* that did more to reshape the earth than billions of years of gradual, miniscule-by-comparison dusting and trickling could ever do (or a whole slew of “tranquil” floods could ever do, for that matter).

It should also be noted that Sedgwick helped the young Charles Darwin in his study of geology; he was one of those who steered him in that direction, so he (unwittingly) helped to create a God-opposing destroyer of faith. We must use the term “unwittingly” or “unknowingly” to be fair to Sedgwick, who would’ve been horrified to hear that anything he’d said or done had led to the Darwinian hypotheses or supported them. In both his public *and* private writings—his 1845 attack on Chambers’ *Vestiges* ; his preface to the 1850 (5th ed.) *Discourse on the Studies of the University of Cambridge*, which carried on a further attack; and letters to Lyell and Darwin himself—he never gave in to evilusion. Rather, he lamented to Lyell and chastised Charles, his former student. [To get a taste of his privately-expressed sentiments, I refer you to the Wikipedia bio-article on Adam Sedgwick, especially p. 3-4, as well as Tom DeRosa’s book, *Evolution’s Fatal Fruit*, p. 180-181]

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES: Gen 1-11**; one supernatural, six-day creation of all things; “one-off,” not plural; no need for successive creations, with variability built into the species via natural regeneration; one supernaturally-orchestrated worldwide flood in Noah’s time, as God’s response to worldwide sin; one mass-repopulation of earth via the human and animal survivors of that Great Catastrophe; one re-shaped, re-structured earth, largely—but not exclusively—due to that colossal combination of “neptunism” and “vulcanism”(massive effects by water *and* volcanic-seismic activity). It seems to me that all the answers to the questions we feel compelled to ask are right there in God’s Word. And those answers don’t shift around under our feet; they stay put, and even a flood of scientific opinion can’t dislodge them.

**1837-1859:** For more than 20 years, Charles Darwin assembles the writings, observations, and opinions—through reading and massive correspondence—of all the scientifically-oriented minds he can mine. He personally meets and becomes friends with Herbert Spencer (somewhat, see his section at 1864) and Thomas (T.H.) Huxley, who became “Darwin’s Bulldog,” his staunchest defender. His 1839 marriage to his cousin, Emma Wedgwood, brought with it a small fortune, so, never needing to work for income, he was at complete leisure to pursue his studies. It’s worth noting once more that this project “got legs” *shortly* after Blyth’s writings were published and only about a year after his return to Britain from the *Beagle* excursion, during which Darwin drank in Lyell. Also, C.D. could build upon ED (Erasmus Darwin), Buffon, Malthus, Lamarck, and Chambers, among unnamed others. The first footsteps of Alfred Wallace were heard in 1855, and they were getting closer in June of 1858, when Lyell and Joseph Hooker (“vice-bulldogs?”) flew into action to put Darwin out front for all of the credit for essentially the same “theory.” [Curious readers could do no better than to read pages 73-80 & 130-144 of Taylor, *In The Minds Of Men*, especially those readers who are intrigued by conspiratorial chicanery.]

**1859:** Invention of the steamroller, and, not coincidentally...

**Charles Darwin** (1809-1882), British naturalist publishes *On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection or the Preservation of Favoured Races in the Struggle for Life*. Note the *whole* title. As pointed out earlier, those words *Favoured Races* were in the title as originally published. Historical revisionists try to airbrush them out, but the honest person in any camp will acknowledge that they were there in 1859 when the actual book was issued (look at photocopies of the covers, you scientists dedicated to empirical fact-finding; we’re looking at you, *Microsoft Bookshelf*, for example). Of course, Darwin’s rabid defenders will trot out the excuse that, in *this* work, “races” did not refer to humanity, but to *species* of non-human life, in the common usage of a 19th-Century Englishman. Well, that’s a little shaky, since it sets up a wordy redundancy of sorts: *On the origin of species...or the preservation of favoured species...*; why not just say, in that case, *preservation of the favoured?* (that, too, would be common 19th-Century Englishspeak, would it not?). But if we put that aside as a minor quibble, what are we to make of an *entire book* that clearly lays out the idea of *favoured human races?*

We can also marshal other evidence for racist ideology in Darwin's other writings, some overt, some more subtle.

Exhibit A (for, "Argue with *this*, I dare ya!") is *The Descent of Man, and Selection in Relation to Sex*, a book released in 1871 by THE SAME AUTHOR. Within that water closet of wall-to-wall lies we find racism that's easily recognized, especially by socially-enlightened 21st-Century humans. Here, Darwinian Devotees, take a swallow or two:

*Those who do not admit the principle of evolution must look at species either as separate creations or as in some manner distinct entities; and they must decide what forms to rank as species by the analogy of other organic beings which are commonly thus received.*

*"they must decide what forms to rank as species by the analogy of other organic beings"*

[He's talking about the *human races*—always plural—and how we have no method of *ranking* the various *forms*—again, plural—apart from an evolutionary framework (the way we can rank *animal* life, from simpler/lower to higher organisms; apparently, **rank we must !** )]

*At some future point, not distant as measured by centuries, the civilised races of man will almost certainly exterminate and replace the savage races throughout the world. At the same time the anthropomorphous apes...will no doubt be exterminated. The break [between living humans and living apes] will then be rendered wider, for it will intervene between man in a more civilised state, as we may hope, than the Caucasian [at the top currently, according to him], and some ape as low as a baboon, instead of as present between the negro or Australian and the gorilla.*

[Translation: the extermination of the "savage races" is something to be hoped for, since it would mean the advancement of the human races above and beyond

the current kingpin race—the Caucasian/white race—and put more distance between evolved humanity and lesser-evolved apes, such as the baboon; the Caucasian race would no longer be at the top, with the *beyond*-Caucasians ascending to the top rung, but those currently occupying the lowest rungs of humanity would no longer *be* (period); Hitler, for one, got this message, loud and clear.]

Even though much more evidence could be introduced from *Descent of Man*, we'll move on to Exhibit B. Quotes found in Darwin's *From So Simple A Beginning* are presented by Darek Isaacs in *The Extinction Of Evolution*, a fairly unique tongue-in-cheek examination of the absurdity of evillusion, another book that I can recommend. Remember that these are the words of Charles Darwin.

*I believe, in this extreme part of South America, man exists in a lower state of improvement than in any other part of the world.*  
[referring to “the Feugian” “race”]

*Some of the tribes of Southern Africa, prowling about in search of roots, and living concealed on the wild and arid plains, are sufficiently wretched.* [he's not talking about poverty, folks]

*The Australian [Aborigine, as Isaacs notes], in the simplicity of the arts of life, comes nearest the Feugian....Although the Australian may be superior in acquirements, it by no means follows that he is likewise superior in mental capacity; indeed, from what I saw of the Feugians when on board, and from what I have read of the Australians, I should think the case was exactly the reverse.* [callback: *and rank we must!* ]

*While going one day on shore near Wollaston Island, we pulled alongside a canoe with six Feugians. These were the most abject and miserable creatures I anywhere beheld.*

**[For man looks at the outward appearance, but the LORD looks at the heart—1 Sam 16:7]**

Is there any need for further evidence of the racist streak in Darwin? For anyone who insists on it, there's plenty more where that came from in *The Extinction of Evolution*; I haven't included some of the best examples of the worst in Darwin. He constantly spoke of "we civilised" and "those savage" races, often detailing the *qualitative differences* between people-groups as real, physical, and mental, and not just cultural. He spoke of human species *and subspecies*; explain *that* away, if you can. Several writers of note, including evolutionists, have seen this racism clearly. We've made prior reference to Stephen Jay Gould, one of the most famous proponents of evillusion in our times. Look at what he had to say:

*Biological arguments for racism may have been common before 1859, but they increased by orders of magnitude following the acceptance of evolutionary theory.*

Did you catch that? Gould maintained that, while racism certainly had its adherents and practitioners before the 1859 publication of *The Denigration of the Species* [*sic*, my term], it spread *exponentially*—"by orders of magnitude"—when it was carried along by the virus of evolutionary thinking. Racism had a vehicle to ride throughout the world. The one who argues that Darwin was *not* racist in his thinking hasn't a moral leg upon which to stand.

Another charge needs to be brought forward: Darwin's degrading and downgrading of women (his *misogynism*, as feminists might say). A few quotes from the Darek Isaacs book will prove *that* case.

*The chief distinction in the intellectual powers of the two sexes is shewn by man attaining to a higher eminence, in whatever he takes up, than woman can attain—whether requiring deep thought, reason, or imagination, or merely the use of the senses and hands...if men are capable of decided eminence over women in many subjects, the average standard of mental power in man must be above that of a woman. (p. 43, The Extinction Of Evolution)*

Now I know you *male* readers understood all of that, but let me try to get you

females up to speed, too. *Juuuust* kidding! It's so obviously absurd! But here's another sampling of the Darwinian assessment:

*Man is more courageous, pugnacious, and energetic than woman, and has more inventive genius.*

*It is generally admitted that with woman the powers of intuition, of rapid perception, and perhaps of imitation, are more strongly marked than in man; but some, at least, of these faculties are **characteristic of the lower races**, and therefore of a past and lower state of civilisation. [bold emphasis mine]*

*Thus man has ultimately become superior to woman.*

It seems to me that this kind of talk should make *any* Darwinian disciple who's not devoid of moral conscience think twice, especially feminist evolutionists (you of the less-evolved, inferior, lower-race-like sex, as your master has put it). Experiencing any cognitive dissonance?

The only thing that can be said for him, albeit in extremely *weak* defense, is that he merely reflected the prevailing attitudes of 19th-Century male "Caucasians" in many places, and in Science-ruled Britain especially. But even if it's suggested that we're reading 21st-Century American English meanings into 19th-Century British English phraseology, some hard and indisputable facts remain:

—*Darwin most definitely departed from the teachings of Scripture, namely, ONE HUMAN RACE, naturally descended by human procreation, from Adam and Eve onward.*

—*Darwin set up a false dichotomy, entirely non-biblical: either special, ongoing creations (plural) or his theory (actually, a low-grade hypothesis), deliberately excluding the one true version of creation and the history of humanity's dispersion, that of God's exclusive eyewitness account in His Word: **Gen 1-11.***

- Darwin most definitely asserted that man, *not* made in the image of God (against **Gen 1:26-27**), had *instead evolved from the ape all the way back to the simplest, first, non-created cell* ; so God says He created mankind in His own image, and the evolved ape, Charles Darwin, calls Him a liar.
- Darwin most definitely chalked up *all* plant and animal life to impersonal, material, and wholly natural *undirected* processes; in what then must necessarily be seen as an *unordered and godless universe of chaotic randomness* (decidedly *non-biblical at every point*).
- Darwin personally ranked women as *intrinsically* and *inherently* lower than men; in *God's* eyes, that's nonsense; differences in roles and gifts exist, but not in fullness of humanity.

Behold your teacher, your hero, your master, your idol, your overgod, evillusionists! See him removed from his cracked and decaying pedestal, and see him for the God-despising, plagiarizing, racist-misogynistic liar that he is, existing for eternity as he does, on the wrong side of a “damnable doctrine.” And if he still has a place on the right side of history in *human* estimation, that will change also. Long before mythical “lower races” ever become extinct or are exterminated—as he predicted and wished—his name and “his theory” will die in disgrace. No good can come from following in his wake, as his acolytes will come to discover, each one in his or her turn. *Awake* instead to reality in God's universe *and live!*

#### HAECKEL AND HUXLEY: GERMAN AND BRITISH (AND **RACIST** ) BULLDOGS

Outside of the ever-growing list of evillusionary dictators and despots—name one in the last 150 years who wasn't or isn't an evolutionist—it would be hard to find two bigger lie-spinning snakes than T.H. Huxley (1825-1895), British biologist, best known as “Darwin's bulldog,” and Ernst Haeckel (1834-1919), *German* biologist, who has often been called, “Darwin's bulldog on the continent.” About the only shade of difference between the two, morally speaking, is that Huxley seems to have genuinely believed that Darwinian evolution *could* be true—with some tweaking, whereas Haeckel seems to have known that it was not

only false, but *impossible*, and yet he dedicated his life to force-feeding falsehood. Hair-splitting aside, both of these wasted lives further confirm my evolution-as-rebellion thesis.

Haeckel's self-tabbed "biogenetic law" grew out of a complete fabrication; his images purporting to show that all vertebrate embryos went through the same early evolutionary stages—thereby "recapitulating" the evolutionary process in every case—were totally imaginary fakes. In the interest of SCIENCE, he'd doctored drawings to fit his "law" and "prove" biological evolution. His deliberate deception was exposed by his scientifically-*responsible* peers, and in his public trial, he was officially discredited (though you never hear about *that* from the evillusion-pushers such as truthaphobic textbook publishers even *today*). For evillusionists, any *lie* that serves The Cause is better than any *truth* that doesn't.

*Haeckel had a satchel he filled with lies, though none of 'em were true, they appealed to the eyes.*

His *unappealing* racism is clearly illustrated by this: his ranking, in his 1868 book which Darwin found so useful in writing *his* 1871 book, *The Descent of Man*, of six human and six simian (ape) races/species. From top to bottom, they were, 1) European (surprised?) 2) East Asian 3) Fuegian (South American) 4) Australian aborigine 5) black African 6) Tasmanian 7) gorilla 8-12) other apes. Sweet, huh? So the Tasmanian "human subspecies" was closer to the gorilla primate than to four of the five other "races" of man. You know who *bought* this rubbish? Darwin, Hitler, the Nazis, the eugenicists, white supremacists, ethnocentrists of every people group—including Hirohito's Japanese and La Raza ("*the* race") and black-liberationists/supremacists of today—to name just a few obvious examples. In each case, the rankings would be tweaked, of course, but the rankings were necessitated, even *demand*ed, by the evillusionary system.

Haeckel heckled Christianity with the kind of religious fervor that foams at the mouth like rabies-ravaged Old Yeller. He opposed the Christian message at every point, but one thing that *really* got his goat was that Christianity...

*makes no distinction of race or of color; it seeks to break down all racial barriers. In this respect the hand of Christianity is against that of Nature, for are not the races of mankind the evolutionary harvest which Nature has toiled through long ages to produce?*

Yeah, what about that?!? How dare that weak-sister religion raise its pathetic, less-fit hand in futile opposition to the pantheistic uber-power of Nature !!! And after Mother Nature had worked so hard and for so long to rid the planet of (sub)human weeds!!! [Margaret Sanger's quote, anyone?] Sorry, evillusionists, but *someone somewhere* had to responsibly report the truth about these lying, racist frauds.

Now *I* could say more, but much more *has* been said—about Haeckel's twisted teachings and serial fraud. I'll gladly refer the reader to D. James Kennedy's *Solving Bible Mysteries* (source of the quote above), DeRosa, and Ian Taylor (see Bibliography). It's probably enough to say of Haeckel at this point that he derided “blind belief in authority”—that would be God's Word in specific—and belief in God the Creator, whom he called a “gaseous vertebrate.” He, too, knows differently now; and *forever*.

And then there's Thomas Henry Huxley, the original “agnostic”—he coined the term—who also hated and mocked the Christian faith, even while pretending to have some respect for the Bible. This seems to have been the primary requirement for membership in Darwin's inner circle, composed of Lyell, Hooker, Haeckel, and Huxley. Resent/hate a “god” who probably doesn't even exist? You're in! Swallow Chuck's chum, hook, line, and sinker? Lifetime Gold Membership! Willing to put *your* reputation and life on the line for His Shy, Serene Highness? I dub thee, “Good Sir Knight Templar of the Order of Unordered Natural Selection!” Only kiss King Chuck's ring, and off you go, to kill all faith!

Huxley didn't have to be asked twice. He threw himself into the fray, claiming that he was “*prepared to go to the Stake if requisite*” and that he was sharpening his “*claws and beak in readiness.*” (DeRosa, 133). Not content to

merely defend the Empire of Empiricist Evolution, he declared all-out war on Bible-rooted orthodoxy and led the charge himself. Here's how he saw the life-or-death struggle:

*Extinguished theologians lie about the cradle of every science as the strangled snakes beside that of Hercules; and history records that wherever science and orthodoxy have been fairly opposed, the latter have been forced to retire from the lists, bleeding and crushed if not annihilated; scotched if not slain. (DeRosa, 144) [What was he smoking?]*

*There is no alleviation for the sufferings of mankind except veracity of thought and of action, and the resolute facing of the world as it is when the garment of make-believe by which pious hands have hidden its uglier features is stripped off. (Collected Essays, 1893) [There's no help coming from the hands of "god" or his deceiving pious servants; nature is tough, but all there is.]*

But what about his racism? In 1890, he published *On the Natural Inequality of Men* (bold emphasis mine). Certainly, that title reflects his anthropology, but in case there should be any misunderstanding in this, look how clearly he'd already spelled it out in 1871:

*No rational man, cognizant of the facts, believes that the average negro is the equal, still less the superior, of the white man. And if this be true, it is **simply incredible** that, when all his disabilities are removed, and our prognathous [lower-jaw protruding] relative has a fair field and no favour, as well as no oppressor, he will be able to compete successfully with his bigger-brained and smaller-jawed rival, in a contest which is to be carried out by thoughts and not by bites. (DeRosa, p. 136; emphasis in original)*

So just in case any of us missed the point, here it is, in all of its naked glory: anybody with a fully-human (caucasoid) brain knows that the subhuman negro could never win in a fair battle of wits. The obviously superior white man

wins every time. The small-brained, *lower* “relative” and “rival” of the white man (not his equally-human brother under God) just can’t keep up. Racist enough for you?

BEFORE WE FINISH THE DEATH-MARCH:  
SOME REMINDERS AND RAMIFICATIONS

It’s often suggested that Charles Darwin lost the last remnant of his Christian faith when his beloved daughter, Annie, died at age ten. While we can certainly understand that such an emotionally-devastating event could scar any human being for life, we can’t accept that as a legitimate excuse to launch a dedicated and bitter “counterattack” against the only One who could bring true peace to that household. Personally, I don’t see evidence of a *genuine Christian* faith on either side of the family. Both the Darwins and the Wedgwoods were *Unitarians*, not to be confused with those of us who embrace Jesus Christ as God, co-equal with The Father and The Holy Spirit (true *Christians*, in precise wording). So Charles Darwin had no *true* faith to lose in the first place. I can say that with a fair amount of confidence because it only reflects God’s Word:

**John 5:21-23—For as the Father raises the dead and gives life to them, even so the Son gives life to whom He will. For the Father judges no one, but has committed all judgment to the Son, that all should honor the Son just as they honor the Father. He who does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent Him. (NKJV)**

**1 Jn 2:22-23—Who is a liar but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist who denies the Father and the Son. Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father either; he who acknowledges the Son has the Father also. (NKJV)**

Charles Darwin certainly did *not* acknowledge the Son as either Creator or God. When he confided in a letter that he felt a bit guilty for having “killed

God”—by kicking Him out of His own universe (he thought)—he had only the Father in mind. The Son apparently meant little or nothing to him, so he cut himself off from The Way, The Truth, and The Life, and then strode right into hell. The worst part of all is that his turning *away* from God in bitterness, instead of *to* God for healing mercy, resulted in abandoning his own family to the lake of fire. He called the *gospel* a “damnable doctrine” because he realized that his ancestors (grandfather Erasmus, father Robert, *etc.*), his living relatives, and most of the people he knew, were not trusting in Christ, thus headed for hell. He chose to resent and fight that truth, even at the eternal expense of his wife and children! The Bible rightly calls such a person *a liar and antichrist* (see above) and *worse than an infidel* (*total unbelieving pagan*, **1 Tim 5:8**).

Please see things the way they are. The “theory” of evolution is a hyped-up hypothesis from hell, a fraudulent fairy tale that never ends well. We all live in the same universe of God’s making; there were and are no co-creators or sub-contractors. God spoke, and it was so, and it all was very good. Leibniz got that much right: it *was* the best of all possible worlds—until sin came in, and everything evil and undesirable with it, including King Death. But the **King** of Kings conquered that most fearsome enemy of feeble man, so *He* is the only One who holds all power in our universe, right now and forevermore. This One, *our* King and our God, is the only Savior from an *eternal* existence where Sin, Lies, Misery, and Death still reign. Only The Truth can free us from eternal slavery, and evillusion can only lead to it.

**1859-1875: Charles Kingsley** (1819-1875), British Anglican priest-professor-novelist enthusiastically defends, promotes, and praises Charles Darwin and his evillusionary scheme. Already in the second edition of *Origin of the Species* (early 1860), his favorable review of the original was included in edited form. Darwin’s “See!” note to all of those who respected the “leaders” of formal religion read like this:

*A celebrated author and divine has written to me that ‘he has gradually learnt to see that it is just as noble a conception of the Deity to believe that He created a few original forms capable of self-development into other*

*and needful forms, as to believe that He required a fresh act of creation to supply the voids caused by the action of His laws.'*

[Note well: Kingsley was chaplain to Queen Victoria at the time!]

Knowing what we know about the true character, beliefs, and mission of Darwin, it's easy to see how disingenuous this action of his was. But *Kingsley*, as a supposed vow-taking servant of Christ, is guiltier still. He threw over the Creator and His Word—Jesus *and* the Bible—for a third-rate charlatan. In the false spirit and tradition of “greater God theology,” stretching back to Burnet and Ray, he wrote this:

*We knew of old that God was so wise that He could make all things but behold, He is so much wiser than even that, that He can make all things make themselves.* (Hunter, p.23)

Kingsley also wrote,

*I must give up much that I have believed and written.* (Taylor, p.355)

Here's how these statements boil down: until my new teacher, the agnostic “scientist,” set the record straight with his finite, sin-curbed reasoning, “we” had always thought of God as *The Creator* who single-handedly made all things, just as He'd taught in/through His Word; how blind and naive of us! Thank you, Mr. Darwin, for improving not only our scientific knowledge, but God Himself!

Maybe today's *quislings* should rather be called *kingsleys*. He sold out to the enemy two generations ahead of that namesake traitor (Norwegian Vidkun Quisling, 1945). This *kingsley* went so far as to write a theistic evolution-themed book for *small children* in 1863, *The Water Babies* . Here's what Jesus had to say about that sort of deceptive, misleading activity:

**It is impossible that no offenses/stumbling blocks should come, but woe to him through whom they do come! It would be better for him if a millstone were hung around his neck,**

**and he were thrown into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones/cause one of these little ones to stumble.(Luke 17:1-2; parallel Matt 18:6-7—NKJV)**

Just as grievous was Kingsley's assertion that evangelizing African-Americans and Australian Aborigines was a waste of time, since they hadn't evolved enough by then to understand the gospel message. [Oh, I see! but they *were* capable of understanding literary cartoons like *The Water Babies*, right? And that *Mother Nature* did the first creating—instead of the Triune God of the Bible—after which even *she* turned things over to the kids.]. It appears the eager student learned well from his new master in both his racism and his displacement of God.

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** I'm tempted to say, "Why bother? If a *celebrated divine* ("Christian" churchman) abandons God's Word at the drop of a hat, why even proceed to call attention back to it?" However, that would be not only self-defeating, but *insane* to the *nth* degree. God does not lie, He does not err, and He does not change in answer to the times. What He wants us to know as essential truth has been infallibly communicated in the original inspired texts of the Bible. The Word written is—like The Word incarnate, Jesus Christ—the same always and forever (**Heb 13:8; John 1:1, 14; Matt 24:35**). Our *omniscient* God has, in His perfect wisdom, put His thoughts into writing in a manner that can meet and increase the understanding of any sentient human being. It's God the Holy Spirit who's in charge of the entire gospel-mission enterprise, and He knows perfectly well both *whom* He will reach and *how* (see **John 3:8, Isa 55:11**). God's hand (reach and power) is never shortened so that He can't redeem or save (**Num 11:23; Isa 50:2, 59:1**). There are no barriers to God's reaching His elect, so His graciously-adopted ones should be thrilled to be included in His redemptive process: **Go, therefore, make disciples; teach them to observe all things that I've commanded! (Matt 28:19-20).**

**Acts 13:48—Now when the Gentiles [of all nations] heard this, they were glad and glorified the word of the Lord. And as many as had been appointed to eternal life believed.**

**1864: Herbert Spencer** (1820-1903), British philosopher-biologist-anthropologist-sociologist publishes *Principles of Biology* (echoes of Lyell?), in which the expression, *survival of the fittest* is coined. Though Darwin disliked Spencer, he liked his expression and—can you guess?—lifted it, putting it into the *fifth* edition of his 1859 work. Today, who associates the term with its real originator? Oh, and *evolution* was first used by Spencer in 1852 (seven years prior to *Origin of the Specious* [*sic*, mine again]). To quote his Wikipedia bio-article, “Spencer developed an all-embracing conception of evolution as the progressive development of the physical world, biological organisms, the human mind, and human culture and societies.” That he did. He took Darwinism and raised it tenfold. Going well beyond Chambers’ anonymous, inept, and misguided attempt to pull all things under the umbrella of a godless cosmos, he tried to explain how *mental* processes and emotions had evolved, as well as customs and ethics. Darwin didn’t bother to delve into those areas. He conveniently dismissed the existence of the human soul, so all such problems were “solved.” [See Taylor, p. 446] Of course, Spencer also fell flat because he didn’t start with God. That didn’t stop him, however, from putting tons of ink to paper in his futile rebellion, or from corralling his own crowd of evillusionary converts: “The single most famous European intellectual in the closing decades of the nineteenth century.” But with the turn of that century came the realization, on the part of many discerning individuals, that his life’s work was empty and *overreaching*, and not definitive and *overarching*. Here’s a slice of Spencer:

*People are beginning to see that the first requisite to success in life is to be a good animal.* (from *Education*, 1861)

That tells you several things about this nut-job: 1) He saw himself as an educator of the people, who obviously were in need of an elite leader to point them toward success; 2) his starting point on that path was the collective knowledge of the evolved “top animal,” and God is nowhere in the picture; 3) success means being true to your animal nature, which is reduced to a drive to survive and reproduce, nothing more; 4) since animals are not moral agents (they have neither moral sense or culpability for their actions), morality is a category that in no way applies to animal life, including the *human* animal; 5) all animals are in

competition with each other—dog eat dog, kill or be killed—so there’s no basis for co-operation or mutual concern; in fact, it’s self-defeating; 6) this all directly translates into *amoral* (*without* morals) behavior as being perfectly acceptable in societal interaction and business; each member of the *homo sapiens* species is on its own to do what it has to do to out-survive and outgrow the competition (“*social Darwinism*”); 7) the most competitive animal is the good animal, and the most successful in this singular life; 8) I said *singular* life because that’s what Spencer believed—no afterlife—although he, too, has been firmly convinced otherwise since he met *his* Maker in AD 1903, when he entered into a hopeless afterlife on the bad side of God; God doesn’t receive *good animals* into His heaven, where success is measured by one rule: humans with souls saved by the person and work of the God-man, Jesus Christ.

Sadly, Spencerian thought lives on in *this* world, especially among me-first modern secularists. It can most easily be seen in every self-justified liar, manipulator, obsessed social climber, serial adulterer, border-crashing lawbreaker, greedy businessperson, thief (pro or amateur), murderer, or power-crazed politician (who might well be all of the former, as well!). So, while Spencer’s body of work is not *publicly respected* as much as it was about 120 years ago, his poison is coursing through the veins of Spencerian zombies today. Their motto is: I’ll do whatever it takes to get what I want, all others and all laws be damned. And the corollary: I’m all that matters; so stay out of my way or pay the price (make way, *good* animal coming through!). [Why do the likes of Josef Stalin, Saul Alinsky, the Clintons, and Frank Marshall Davis Jr. (“Barack Obama II”) come to mind now?]

BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES: Doing something a bit different in this section, let’s call attention to a publication that took precisely the *wrong* tack in commenting on Spencer’s evolutionary scheme. The British publication, *Christian Spectator*, had this to say in blasphemous *praise* of the latest, greatest “prophet”:

*Like Moses, when he came down from the Mount, this positive philosophy [evolution] comes with a veil over its face, that its too divine radiance may be hidden for a time. This is Science that has been conversing with God, and brings in her hand His law written on stone.* (Taylor, 400)

Right there were two sentences and two-dozen errors. The writer falls over himself to pay homage, via a *Biblical allusion*, to a *good animal* that rejected Christianity, the Bible, God, and all of his true prophets, including Moses. This sycophant has made evillusionary theory the *new divine revelation, etched in stone by the hand of God*. He could hardly have been more deceived himself, and more tragically dim-witted in the decision to elevate the deception of an antichrist to divine “truth!” No, you “Christian” numbskull! Spencer had it *all wrong; everything* he held to be true under an all-encompassing evolutionary scheme came from his sin-addled, God-denying muddle-brain. He started without God, deceived many—including you, obviously—and marched right into eternal misery. And you want us to grovel in the dust before this wretch?! No! Keep your babble to yourself; give me—and all 100% humans—the Bible.

**1860+:** **Asa Gray** (1810-1888), *American* botanist-professor becomes “Darwin’s promoter, ambassador, and apostle in the United States”; he tried “to reconcile Darwin’s natural selection with Christianity’s belief in supernatural intervention and finished by being true to neither.” (both Taylor, p. 367). So that’s all we really need to know about this friend to falsehood, this *theistic evolutionist*. If you ever wonder just how and when evillusion took root in America, look no further than “Asa Appleseed.” In turn, he deceived himself, his Harvard students and faculty, and even **Yale** professor, **James Dana**, another “Christian” misleader. Of course, Yale fell, too, because of Dana’s dogmatism in propagating the theistic-evolution anti-gospel.

Gray was also employed as a dupe in a way that was apparently unknown to him, when a letter supposedly written to Gray in 1857 (it was never found in *anyone’s* possession) allegedly established Darwin’s priority over Wallace in their shared “theory.” That was in 1858, when Gray was conveniently *not* located to confirm or deny, and a phantom letter “proved” Darwin’s claim. Regardless of what actually transpired in that particular chain of events, thirty years later Gray’s *Darwiniana* emerged as a full-fledged vindication of Darwinism’s supposed compatibility with belief in God. Gray actively denied the painfully-clear truth that faith in the true God and evolution were, are, and ever *will* be mutually exclusive. About the only thing that we can say on Gray’s behalf is that he *did*

try to steer Darwin back to the Creator at various times in their many years of personal correspondence. He argued from the side of obvious intelligent design throughout the universe, but he failed to explain the worldwide presence of evil, suffering, and death to Darwin, who was utterly fixated on that side of things. This points out the inadequacy of today's Intelligent Design movement: it can't explain, through purely scientific methodology, how sin entered our world and robbed it of beauty, order, health, and happiness, putting evil, disorder, and death into the driver's seat. Any argument detached from God's Word will necessarily get the story wrong and fail in its purported explanations. So Gray entered into the battle unarmed, and on the field of Darwin's choosing. He could *not* win, because God has never promised to bless our unauthorized strategies, even when we are "doing good" (see once again—**Rom 3:8**).

**BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** As a "committed Congregationalist"—though he was married to a Unitarian, the Biblical command of **2 Cor 6:14** having been set aside—Gray had to know he was befriending, reassuring, and promoting an avid, unyielding God-opposer. In that case, the rest of that passage in **2 Corinthians (6:14-18)** was there for his profitable use. The message is clear: you can be on the side of God and the truth, or you can take the side of Belial and lies. What you *can't* do is be on *both* sides, and you'll never get Christ and Belial on the same side; reconciliation is not possible. See further, **1 Jn 1:5-7**: God is light and no darkness; true fellowship is found only among those walking in the light. What about hanging out with the likes of Darwin and his vice-bulldog, Joseph Hooker? **Evil company corrupts good habits—1 Cor 15:33**; the influence nearly always runs just one way, so beware. **2 Pet 2**, in discussing false teachers—as we, too, have been, throughout this work—paints quite a picture:

[Beginning at verse 12, through 19] **But these, like natural brute beasts [*good animals* ?] made to be caught and destroyed, speak evil of the things they do not understand, and will utterly perish in their own corruption...cannot cease from sin, enticing unstable souls...They have forsaken the right way and gone astray...These are wells without water, clouds carried by a tempest, for whom is reserved the blackness of**

**darkness forever. For when they speak great swelling words of emptiness, they allure...the ones who have actually escaped from those who live in error. While they promise them liberty, they themselves are slaves of corruption; for by whom a person is overcome [Darwin, in Gray's case], by him also he is brought into bondage/slavery. (NKJV)**

In plain 21st-Century American-speak: *stay in The Word*, and *away* from soul-enslaving, know-nothing deceivers. Where they're headed, you don't want to go! They'll take you down with 'em.

**1868+:** **James McCosh** (1811-1894), Scottish-born American philosopher-pastor and president of the College of New Jersey/Princeton University for 20 years, delivers that institution to evillusion. Reader, if I were a betting man, I'd wager that by now, YOU could fill in the rest of the story here. Over and over and over again, "men of God" have sold out God's Word, and therefore, God Himself. McCosh was the first recognized American "churchman" (religious leader) to publicly endorse evolution. And he was *adamant* about it, even to the point that he felt personally insulted if one of his students wasn't fully converted to his theistic evolution scheme. On campus, a civil war of sorts was being fought. On the seminary side, Charles Hodge was anti-evolution, though he, too, capitulated on non-biblical long ages. Hodge *did* champion Biblical inerrancy and the truth of the Genesis Creation account, but into his blind spot crept those vast eons of time that evolution requires; so his record isn't spotless. But on the university side, McCosh was preaching a false gospel that mixed lies with truth, and Christ with Belial. This, then, completed the trifecta of apostasy: three universities founded by creationist Christians—Harvard, Yale, and Princeton—had all gone over to the enemy, suckered-in by an intellectual siren song. Remember those two quotes, way back in chapter 3? Both Matthew Henry and George Orwell observed that "most learned men/intellectuals" [Henry/Orwell terms] are the most prone to the stupidest ideas. Whether it's the idea of glomming on to the latest thought-trend, having something new to lord over the great unwashed non-elite, or courting the praise of peers, I don't know. I guess I'm not intellectual enough. But put the bait out there, and watch 'em bite! Well, God's well aware of this,

and He had this to say through His inspired apostle Paul:

**1 Cor 1:20—Where is the wise? Where is the scribe? Where is the disputer/debater of this age? Has not God made foolish the wisdom of this world?**

**1 Cor 1:26-30—For you see/consider your calling, brethren, that not many wise according to the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble/well-born, are called . But God has chosen the foolish things of the world to put to shame the things which are mighty; and the base/insignificant/lowly things of the world and the things which are despised God has chosen, and the things which are not, to bring to nothing the things that are, that no flesh should glory in His presence. But of Him you are in Christ Jesus, who became for us wisdom from God—and righteousness and sanctification and redemption—that, as it is written, “He who glories, let him glory in the LORD.” (both NKJV) [See also Jer 9:23-24]**

I don't know how this makes any particular reader feel, but it makes this writer feel good. If God has numbered me among the chosen “foolish things,” I can only thank Him, praise Him, and *glory in the LORD!* If I wasn't “well-born,” it matters not; I'm born again by God's electing grace in Christ Jesus, so I have *wisdom from God*. Foolish, powerless, and despised for a mere blip of time in this world? It means nothing in comparison to a glorious eternity with my Creator and Savior. Any sane person can see who gets the better “deal.” If a modern-day Esau wants to sell his birthright (**Gen 25**) for some fresh stew, I suppose that's his business, and God will deal with him accordingly. But I won't be as big a fool, and neither should anyone who's still alive, still able to turn back to God through The Truth.

**MORE BIBLICAL CORRECTIVES:** The real issue has always been pride: pride

in possessions or intellectual powers, pride of place in society and academic circles, pride in family ancestry, nation, or humanity itself—it’s all misplaced and gets you nothing in the endless end. **“That no flesh should glory in His presence.”** This may come as a shock to anyone who’s riding high-and-mighty right now: it’s *never* about them; never! Pride can lead you by the nose into a world of illusion, but when the bubble bursts, you’ll be staring The Judge in the face, *THE* Creator of all that is, *THE* Wisdom, *THE REASON* for the existence of anything. All glory belongs to Him, and there’s only ignobility for you:

**Pride and arrogance and the evil way and the perverse mouth I hate—Prov 8:13**

**Surely He scorns the scornful, but gives grace to the humble—Prov 3:34**

**1883+:** Evillusion, be it Darwinian, neo-Darwinian, or non-Darwinian, spreads worldwide and dominates as unquestionable dogma in all scientific fields. That date, 1883, is really just symbolic; Darwin met his Maker and Judge in 1882, but his poisonous legacy lives on, as is all-too obvious. If you don’t prostrate yourself before the towering anti-god that is EVOLUTION these days, you’re “not doing *REAL SCIENCE*,” according to the non-faith priests who’ve descended from the loins of Lyell and Darwin. Maybe you think I’m a bit over the top with this hyperbolic language, but witness what the sold-out super-apostate, **Pierre Teilhard de Chardin** (1881-1955), actually said about Darwin’s “theory”—

*a general postulate to which all theories, all hypotheses, all systems must henceforward bow and which they must satisfy in order to be thinkable and true.* (Hunter, p. 31)

and this...

*evolution is a light which illuminates all facts, a trajectory which all lines of thought must follow —this is what evolution is.* (Hunter, p. 132)

Okay now, did I exaggerate? According to the leftist/communist hero and twice-exiled lunatic Jesuit, PTdC, *all systems must line up with evolutionary thinking to even be thinkable, let alone true; all systems must bow before the ALL-ILLUMINATING LIGHT OF EVOLUTION* ; all facts are *subjected* to its sweeping glare. [Boy, I'd better make like Kingsley; there's just so much I didn't understand until Father Pete set me straight; excuse me, I've gotta make tracks for the lab, 'cuz there's a lot of groveling that must be done!]

Hollow-brained, amoral hoaxers like PTdC can be found under any rock in the evillusionary landscape, and...what's that? Hoaxer? What's that all about? Glad you asked! It seems that Father Pete was intimately connected to *both* the Peking Man farce and the Piltdown Man hoax. Pillar of integrity, that man of the cloth! But since the Romish church doesn't have a corner on deception, it must be duly reported that even otherwise-orthodox —or *nearly*-orthodox—Protestants *continued* to capitulate to the forces of evillusion (beyond those already mentioned). In Britain, **Frederick Temple**, Archbishop of Canterbury, genuflected to Darwin (and it probably had much to do with his gaining the top spot in the Anglican Church). He embraced theistic evolution, which is pretty much the default position for anyone today who wants to appear to be a “christian” of some sort while ignoring the only eyewitness Testimony that we have, that of God, who can not lie (**Gen 1-11; Titus 1:2; Heb 6:18**). [*e.g.*, Roman Catholic church]

Stateside, **Joseph LeConte, Alexander Winchell, George Frederick Wright, Henry Ward Beecher, James Woodrow, B.B. Warfield, Gresham Machen**, and, to a lesser extent, even **Francis Schaeffer**, either sold out to evolutionary theorizing or some aspects of it (*e.g.*, Schaeffer made room for long ages in **Genesis**; he didn't want to be “dogmatic” about the length of the days in **1:1-2:3**). For more of their individual stories, I refer the reader to *Did God Create in 6 Days?* (Pipa & Hall, editors); Taylor's *In The Minds Of Men* [again!]; Douglas F. Kelly's *Creation and Change*; and *Christian History* magazine, issue 107, *Debating Darwin*. Today's most visible proponent of *progressive creationism* —or *theistic evolution*, however you want to categorize it—is **Hugh Ross**. I do *not* recommend his teachings, but I *do* recommend *rebuttals* by Dr. Jonathan Sarfati (*Refuting Compromise*) and Tim Chaffey/Jason Lisle (*Old-Earth Creationism On Trial* ). [More info on those mentioned in Bibliography.]

## ONE-PAGE KEY POINTS SUMMARY (“THE GIST”)

- 1605-1620 **Bacon**: scientific method; empiricism; two books of God: the Bible/revelation and Nature
- 1637 **Descartes**: human rationalism; doubt all; totally-mechanical universe; God marginalized/gone
- 1670 **Spinoza**: “god *or* nature” interchangeable terms for impersonal “deity”; pantheistic determinism
- 1681 **Burnet**: God is greater/better if He put self-creating/co-creating capability into His creatures
- 1691 **Ray**: joins and furthers theological naturalist/“greater God” theology-science ecumenism
- 1696 **Whiston**: defends Biblical worldwide flood, but brings in a non-biblical comet as the cause of it
- 1710 **Leibniz**: defends an unbiblical god through misunderstanding & deistic redefinition
- 1755+ **Kant**: can’t get it right; smugly redefines “god” and divides “knowable” from “unknowable” and co-opts Swedenborg’s nebular hypothesis for origins of the stellar worlds (cosmos)
- 1778 **Buffon**: suddenly, earth is 75,000+ years old! and an early evolutionary scheme already emerges
- 1791+ **Erasmus Darwin**: grandpa of Charles, openly suggests many now-familiar tenets of *non-faith*
- 1795 **Hutton**: true father of long-age uniformitarianism, though influence much greater after death
- 1796 **Laplace**: more comprehensive nebular hypothesis and no place for God in the universe
- 1798 **Malthus**: geometrical population growth, arithmetical resource-growth=doomsday! Darwin & Wallace both read, influenced by him, extended implications for all *animals*, including mankind
- 1802 **Playfair**: brings Hutton’s work out of the shadows, rehabilitates the author’s reputation; some years down the road, avid student Charles Lyell drinks in the “kool-aid” with gusto
- 1804 **Chalmers**: tells congregation he’s discovered “gap” between first two verses of Genesis that could admit millions or billions of years; just the ticket to reconcile “facts” of science and Biblical narrative
- 1809 **Lamarck**: first “coherent theory of (biological) evolution?”; inheritance of acquired characteristics
- 1813 **Cuvier**: ongoing (progressive) special creation; opens up possibility of human *races* (plural)
- 1820 **Buckland**: “vindicates” scientific findings as factual, not contradictory to Scripture; flip-flops
- 1823 **Faber**: probably first day/age hypothesizer, and another would-be faith-science compromiser
- 1826-28 **Fleming**: his timely downgrading of the earth-reshaping Noahic flood influences Lyell
- 1830-33 **Lyell**: *Principles of Geology* cements uniformitarianism firmly in place, along with eons
- 1835-37 **Blyth**: creationist ideas reworked and applied to evolutionary scheme by Charles Darwin
- 1836 **Bridgewater Treatises**: fail in intended commissions, but fan evolutionary flames built by burning Bibles
- 1837 **Agassiz**: brings in massive glaciation (during a long ice age) and more talk of human *races* (plural)
- 1837-39 **Pye-Smith**: insists on not only *local flood*, but local (Mesopotamian valley) *creation*, too
- 1841 **Hugh Miller**: relies on testimony of the rocks over that of God; loses his way, ends in suicide
- 1844 **Chambers**: publishes attempt at unifying-evolutionary scheme, *Vestiges...* anonymously
- 1844 **Sedgwick**: opposes evolutionary schemes, but sells out on long ages, leaving door wide open
- 1837-1859 **Darwin** works on “*his* theory” by collecting input mostly through private correspondence, while **Wallace** is coming to quite similar conclusions in the world’s jungles, by as early as 1855
- 1859 **Darwin**: *On The Origin Of The Species By Means Of Natural Selection, etc.*
- 1863 **Kingsley**: novelist/churchman takes a shine to *Origin* and Darwin, praises and promotes both
- 1864 **Spencer**: tries to fit all of life under evolutionary umbrella, including emotions and morality
- 1860+ **Gray**: first prominent American convert; gets Darwin published stateside; betrays Harvard, Yale
- 1868+ **McCosh**: puts Princeton U. in evolutionary column, completing great Ivy League trifecta
- 1883+ **evillusion** promoted worldwide, even declared as scientific fact, despite *zero real evidence*

## CHARLES DARWIN'S *OTHER* COUSIN (THE ONE HE DIDN'T MARRY)

**Francis Galton** (1822-1911) shared **Erasmus Darwin** as a grandparent, as we've previously indicated. Unlike C.D., but *like* Lyell, he was knighted (in 1909), so he was *Sir* Francis. Instead of beginning with God and pursuing the one thing needful (**Luke 10:42**), Galton abused and wasted his intellectual gifts and became another God-rejecting misleader of men. One quick example: he did some research on the power of prayer and concluded that it had no effect. He saw that people who were prayed for didn't necessarily live longer than those who weren't, so he figured by that sloppy "science" that it was a waste of time. And so on he went to waste his life. Among his "contributions" to civilization were his suggestion that the Chinese should mass-migrate to Africa to *displace* the "inferior blacks," and his 1910 novel that called for a utopia organized by *eugenics* as a religion. Swell guy, eh?

The term *eugenics* ("well-born"/"good birth") and the phrase, "nature versus nurture" were coined by Galton, and that first term might well ring a bell with alert readers. Yes, *this* is the guy who invented the morally-repugnant and racist pseudoscience of eugenics. This ardent evillusionist went in search of a way to help evolution along, to pick up the pace a bit in the area of *human* development. It became obvious to him that those who *weren't* well-born—who weren't born into wealthy, healthy, and intellectually-superior families—were putting a drag on evolutionary progress in the human species; blame it on those lower *subspecies*, as his cousin had put it. So, what to do about that? Well, society must get rid of that dead weight. Since abilities are inherited (he maintained), great care must be taken to see that parents are qualified to *be* parents, and the underqualified/unqualified should be proactively discouraged from meeting, marrying, and adding to "inferior races." Through good, restricted breeding, then, a better world would result. Where that kind of thinking leads should be rather obvious. But I'll give a few hints.

Galton: *what Nature does blindly, slowly, and ruthlessly, man may do providently, quickly, and kindly.* (DeRosa, p. 141); his "providently" has

nothing to do with the Providence of God, so he was being deceitful in his use of that term; he said of cousin Charles: **There was no man who I revered, or to whom I owed more, spiritually, than to him** (DeRosa, 139); and “kindly?”—quite an ironic use of that term!; he means forcible separation of couples, state-restricted marriages, prescribed/mandatory birth control, forced sterilization, *abortion*, and by implication, post-birth *infanticide* for society’s undesirables. Whatever aids evolution. Death is the vehicle of progress.

Darwin-Galton-Eugenics enthusiast **Margaret Sanger**, founder of Planned Parenthood [*Murderhood* is much closer to the truth] got the message loud and clear: “*Birth Control has been accepted by the most clear thinking and far seeing of the Eugenists themselves as the most constructive and necessary of the means to racial health.*” (DeRosa, 142).

“Racial health”—you did notice that, right? Well, in *Germany*, the intellectuals embraced eugenics with the same wild enthusiasm they’d shown for evilusion, and could you possibly guess why? It was the perfect “justification” for the solution to “the Jewish problem” and all other “useless eater” problems presented to the Nazis. Take ‘em out, group by group, and emerge with a better world. Since entire books have been written on the connections between Darwin and Hitler, eugenics and genocide, and evolution and abortion, I’ll close this brief look with a reminder: if evolution is truly Charles Darwin’s child, then *his* lineage must also include the worst, most soulless murderers of innocents *ever*. In a very real sense, he begat both the European *and* American holocausts. The Jewish holocaust, the religious and “ethnic-cleansing” pogroms and mass-extirminations, and the holocaust of abortion-on-demand can all trace their origins back to Darwin. He certainly didn’t invent racism, religious persecution, or baby-murder, but his “theory” has prolifically provided “justification” for all such evils as wholly natural, morally-neutral actions of mere animal organisms.

There’s a rather telling footnote to Francis Galton’s tale. God had the last word on his personal legacy. Mr. “good birth/well-born” took care to “marry well,” too. However, 43 years of marriage failed to produce one well-born offspring. That’s right: God didn’t allow *Mr. Eugenics* to pass his genes on to anyone.

## WHAT ABOUT THE MILLER-UREY EXPERIMENT?

The last words on that “cheat sheet” three pages back were, “despite *zero real evidence*.” I’ll stick by that; absolutely! But since long-disproved propaganda-pieces like **Haeckel’s fraudulent embryo drawings** and the possibility of **spontaneous generation** can still be found in truthaphobic textbooks, let’s take a look at one of those purported evidence-sets.

“What about the Miller-Urey experiment? That proved that life can come from non-life, given the correct conditions!” Nope. It proved no such thing. All it proved is the lengths to which truth-suppressors will go in order to banish God from His universe (as if it were possible!). Look at the bottom line: based on then-current speculation of what kind of conditions may have existed—chemically speaking—at the “dawn of time,” an elaborate beakertube-condenser-trap-vacuum-water-ammonia-methane-hydrogen apparatus was fed *electrical current* (from outside, mind you), and after a week, some *impossibly-far-from-life* amino acids were found present in the trap. Wow! So for **spontaneous generation** to work, all it needed was a lab, chemicals, formed glass conduits, a source of electricity, and designing intelligence (to conceive the whole scheme, set it up, and make it go) in the form of *already-living beings*.

**Think** about this for a moment. The child has given birth to the parent! Absurd! The whole scheme of evolutionary processes stands or falls on this very premise of a supposed spontaneous generation from non-living matter (and where did *that* come from?) to up-and-atom life (pun intended; there’ll be no apology). It won’t work, either, I’m quick to point out, to say that maybe that particular experiment didn’t prove what it sought to prove, but that doesn’t completely rule out spontaneous generation as the first lifegiver/creator that gave rise to everything that is. Francesco Redi and Louis Pasteur showed what utter nonsense that is long ago, and there is in *real* science this thing called the Law of Biogenesis, not to be confused with Haeckel’s bogus “Biogenetic Law.” *Real* science says: living organisms develop *only* from other living organisms, and *not* from non-living matter. In short, ***life can only come from life, never from non-life*** (it takes one to grow one).

SCIENCE itself has declared spontaneous generation to be a totally-mythical impossibility, as its laws require every effect to have a cause; an *effect*, inert matter, can't *cause* itself (can't bring itself into existence). Secondly, there is the Second Law of Thermodynamics, which dictates that all things are wearing/winding/running down, moving from organization to *disorganization*, not the reverse. More "less" all the time, that's how it goes in the real universe. The total amount of matter and energy in our universe can't be increased (aside from God's intervention), but *existing* matter and energy are constantly dissipated and recycled into other, less-usable forms. All of this is squarely against a move from non-life to life, and all we ever observe is life *from* life (reproduction) and life *to* non-life (destruction and death). Thirdly, consider this: the Miller-Urey experiment took place in 1953, 60+ years ago at the time of this writing, and this is the *best* the evillusionists have to offer!?! To this day, if someone came up with "scientific proof" that spontaneous generation *could* have gotten the ball rolling—despite all other scientific proof against that possibility—we'd have an instant global "hero," folks! You don't think that every possible effort is being made by the S.G. true-believers to find that "holy grail," that instant claim on earthly "immortality?" Think again. God-opposers would jump out of their skins to embrace this newest confirmation of their desperate wishful thinking, just as they "leapt at" *On The Origin Of Species* in 1859, as evolutionist Sir Julian Huxley put it. It's abundantly clear that if there was anything to S.G., we'd all know about it by now ("I *knew* it! God *is* dead").

Consider these realistic quotes from well-known "Science Club" insiders regarding SG's impossibility:

Sir Bernard Lovell, 1979: *The possibility of such a chance [his emphasis] occurrence leading to the formation of one of the smallest protein molecules is unimaginably small. Within the boundary conditions of time and space we are considering it is **effectively zero*** [Bold emphasis mine; Taylor, p. 202]

Sir Fred Hoyle, 1981: *The notion that not only the biopolymers but the operating program of a living cell could be **arrived at by chance** in a primordial soup here on Earth is evidently **nonsense of a high order**.* [My emphasis, Taylor, 202]

“Two of England’s leading scientists, Hoyle and [N. Chandra] Wickramasinghe (1981), working independently of each other came to the conclusion that the **chance of life appearing spontaneously from nonlife anywhere in the universe was effectively zero**. Surprisingly, these authors, respectively an agnostic and a Buddhist, concluded that the **origin of life demands the existence of God to have created it**. [bold emphasis mine, quotation is from Ian Taylor, p. 202-203]

For the specifics on the *enormous* amount of *precision-engineered, information-driven* complexity that is necessary to produce even one “simple” living, self-reproducing cell, I refer the reader to Paul S. Taylor’s work, *The Illustrated ORIGINS Answer Book*, pages 21-24, and Dr. Sarfati’s DVD, *From Chemicals To Living Cell*. Here’s a hint, however: between the roughly 100 *specific* amino acids that must be present in *proper proportions* (and with “left-handed” connectability) and that targeted living cell, proteins, DNA, RNA, ATP, enzymes, and non-living assembler-machines must all be there to do their jobs without a slip-up, and they all have to “know” what they’re supposed to do and where and when.

*Evolve that*, blind-chance, purposeless, undirected evolution! Yes, and do it successfully *trillions* of times over just to get one living, self-reproducing organism. Evillusionists should just admit it. They know better; they can’t be that gullible or that stupid! So they should stop wasting their lives in pursuit of a phantom, no-God universe. No trail leads there; it’s an illusion that will prove to be eternally fatal.

## LOOKING AT LUTHER

**Martin Luther** (1483-1546) was the leader chosen by Almighty God to be the “point man” of The Reformation. Even more than the other Reformers who followed, he had to possess the tremendous courage that’s often required to stand—nearly alone—for truth. By God’s grace, Luther came through in a big way.

While he had some rough edges—his attitude towards the Jews was clearly in need of refinement, and his stubbornness sometimes got in the way of Protestant progress—his love for the Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, can't reasonably be challenged. Like the Apostle Paul, Martin Luther was bold and out-front with his faith in the Triune God of The Bible. For that reason, we all can benefit from what he had to say about both Creation and standing strong on the side of the Truth (**John 14:6**).

*When Moses writes that God created heaven and earth and whatever is in them in six days, then let this period continue to have been six days, and do not venture to devise any comment according to which six days were one day. But if you cannot understand how this could have been done in six days, then grant the Holy Spirit the honor of being more learned than you are. For you are to deal with Scripture in such a way that you bear in mind that God Himself says what is written. But since God is speaking, it is not fitting for you wantonly to turn His Word in the direction you wish to go.*

(*Old-Earth Creationism On Trial* , p. 75, as well as in several other works)

*If I profess with the loudest voice and clearest exposition every portion of the truth of God except precisely that little point which the world and the Devil are at that moment attacking, I am not confessing Christ, however boldly I may be professing Christ. Where the battle rages, there the loyalty of the soldier is proved, and to be steady on all the battle-front besides, is merely flight and disgrace if he flinches at that point.* (quote from *The Complete Works of Francis A. Schaeffer*, CD-ROM, 1985)

In this, we should all imitate Luther. Don't flinch; stand strong for the Truth.

## CHECKING IN WITH CALVIN

Although **John Calvin** (1509-1564) was *not* an inspired, inerrant, and infallible prophet of God, something that we Calvinists tend to forget, it can be reasonably and justly claimed that his teachings more accurately reflect the Biblical system than any other theologian since the apostle Paul; that's something *non-Calvinists* tend to forget. It's worthwhile, therefore, to see where Calvin stood on the issue of Creation.

Despite the misguided and rather convoluted attempt by **B.B. Warfield** (1851-1921) to bring Calvin onto the side of evolution, we'll find him decidedly in the six-day creationist camp. Warfield claimed that a quote from Calvin's *Commentary on Genesis* (1563) pointed to the validity of the Ruin-Restoration Theory (gap theory), in that he seemed to be open to the idea of a *re-creation* which was described in **Gen 1:2**. Here's that quote:

*We have already heard that before God had perfected the world it was an **undigested mass**; he now teaches that the power of the Spirit was necessary in order to sustain it. [bold emphasis mine]*

Do you see the same thing Warfield saw? That the “undigested mass” to which Calvin referred was the *original* (destroyed) creation that *preceded* the creation period described in **Gen 1:2-2:3**? The “Gap Theorists” must have it so, and they think they must have Calvin in their club, so they go to such ridiculous lengths. But let's provide the immediate context for this cherry-picked, misread quote. Just above that passage in the commentary, Calvin wrote:

2. “*And the earth was without form and void.*” I shall not be very solicitous about the exposition of these two epithets, “tohu”, and “bohu.” The Hebrews use them when they designate anything empty and confused, or vain, and nothing worth. Undoubtedly Moses placed them both in opposition to all those created objects which pertain to the form, the ornament and the perfection of the world. Were we now to take away, I say, from the earth all that God added after the time here alluded to,

*then we should have this rude and unpolished, or rather shapeless chaos...in that mass of matter nothing was solid or stable, nothing distinct.*

Translation for 21st-Century English-speakers: I'm not gonna go into a lot of detail about what the Hebrew words, *tohu* and *bohu* can possibly mean. They're translated here as without form/formless and void/empty/barren; in short, a confused blob of worthlessness. This was the mass of indistinct raw material that God created out of nothing (*ex nihilo*), with which He proceeded to work: separating, forming, shaping, building, polishing, and perfecting into final prototypes (first objects).

There's not one word here—or in any of Calvin's voluminous works—in favor of a non-biblical gap theory; a pre-historical rebellion by Lucifer that resulted in the wiping out of a prior created world; a long-age creation period; or of any evolutionary hypothesis. That should be clear enough to any honest reader. Just why the likes of Warfield, an otherwise zealous defender of God's inerrant Biblical truth, would choose to side with Bible-deniers is beyond my comprehension. Of course, he wasn't the first or the last to do so. But we'll move on now to the *positive* statements Calvin made *for* six-day creation.

First, we'll quote from his *Institutes of the Christian Religion* (1536):

*Moses relates that the **work of creation was accomplished** not in one moment, but **in six days**. By this statement we are drawn away from fiction to the one God who thus **divided his work into six days**... [bold emphasis mine; p. 142 of the Beveridge translation]*

Two observations: 1) In the first sentence, Calvin was answering Augustine's assertion that the work of creation had been accomplished instantaneously; Calvin affirmed instead, along with the Creator-Lawgiver, Jesus Christ, in **Ex 20:11**, that the work spanned six days; 2) Calvin sees the purpose of God in taking six days to create what He could have created in an instant: as instruction to mankind by example of orderly progression (decently, and in order—**1 Cor 14:40**, with a seventh-day rest—**Ex 20:8-11, 31:15-17**).

Anticipated objection: Calvin does *not* define the six days as familiar/24-hour/ordinary days. That's true with specific regard to this passage, but false when other statements of his are brought in. *Just two sentences above* that "Moses relates..." passage, Calvin refers, for the second time in two pages (p. 141-142), to an earth of about "six thousand years" in age. For him to believe and assert this **requires a literal, six-day creation period and tight Biblical chronologies (Gen 5 & 11)**. There's just no way to stay within the Biblical confines and exceed by even *thousands* of years—much less millions or billions—the total time period of roughly 6000 years from creation to recent centuries. Even the most conservative day-age theory, untenable though it is, requires a *12,000* year-old earth (6000 years for the creation "week" and 6000 years beyond). That fact rules out Calvin as even a *minimal* re-definer of the days in **Gen 1 & 2**, to say nothing of pouring the *millions/billions of years* that gap-theorists insist upon into a non-existent space between the first two verses of God's Word. If Warfield couldn't see this fact, I'm utterly dumbfounded. What was he thinking? And what did he hope to gain by such eisegesis?

Further clear proof of Calvin's literal-historical-grammatical-*Biblical* stance is found in his Genesis commentary:

1. "The folly of those is refuted who imagine that unformed matter existed from eternity; and who gather nothing else from the narration of Moses than that the world was furnished with new ornaments, and received a form of which it was before destitute. This indeed was formerly a common fable among heathens, who...adulterated the truth of God with strange figments."

[It's a fable of the heathens, including ancient Greeks like Democritus and Aristotle, that matter is eternal; also a figment is the idea that God merely formed things from ever-existent matter.]

2. "Therefore the Lord, by the very order of the creation, bears witness that he holds in his hand the light, which he is able to impart to us without the sun and moon."

[This refers to the creation of the sun on the *fourth day* as opposed to the first, as theistic evolutionists and some “creationists” hold; by making it *four days into* the process, God highlighted Himself as the True Source of light and all life, and relegated our powerful sun to secondary-cause status; the sun is a mere creature, and not to be worshiped.]

3. “God willed that there should be a regular vicissitude [alternating change/succession] of days and nights; which also followed immediately when the first day was ended.”

[“Solar” days—ordinary, 24-hour days composed of day and night—have rolled on from the ending of the very *first* day without interruption or anomaly by God’s will; the *second* day *immediately*—without *any* intervening time—followed the first day, and on the cycle went and continues; this also confirms that Calvin’s interpretation left zero room for any other scheme than a literal *hexameron* (Greek for “six days”); another *direct implication* is that Calvin held to a relatively “*young earth*” less than 10,000 years old, which we’ve already seen.]

4. “Let us rather conclude that God himself took the space of six days, for the purpose of accommodating his works to the capacity of men...God applied the most suitable remedy when he distributed the creation of the world into successive portions, that he might fix our attention, and compel us, as if he had laid his hand upon us, to pause and to reflect.”

[This puts the stamp of approval on what we’ve already asserted: Calvin recognized that God did things the way He did to best teach us about His care and order in the Creation Week; an example carved into permanent remembrance by the finger of God (**Ex 20:8-11**); and again, is it within the “capacity of men” to comprehend a day equal to millions of years? Preposterous!]

5. “...just as we have before observed, that the *creation of the world was distributed over six days, for our sake*, to the end that our minds might the more easily be retained in the meditation of God’s works...” [italics mine, but re-emphasis Calvin’s!]

6. [on **Gen 2:1**] “Moses summarily repeats that in six days the fabric of the heaven and the earth was completed...refutes the error of those who imagine that the world was formed in a moment, for it declares that an end was only at length put to the work on the sixth day.”

[He reiterates in 1563 what he said way back in 1536: God created in six days, and not in an instant; it’s revealing that in the mid-16th Century, the controversy that Calvin had to contend with was not creation vs. evolution, but six-day creation vs. *instantaneous* creation!]

7. On **Gen 1:28**, Calvin confirms the unity of the human *race* (singular, just as the Bible teaches), a doctrine that excludes progressive creation, pre-adamites, and sin, disease, suffering, and death before The Fall. This, in turn, is reinforced in his comments on **Gen 2:2**, where he explains that all of the evils of creation that we now observe were not a part of the original perfect creation (**Gen 1:31**), but rather came in with the first act of disobedience by Adam (**Gen 3, Rom 5, 1 Cor 15**).

Let Calvin summarize his own position, and let us learn from his sage advice:

*Let us willingly remain hedged in by those boundaries within which God has been pleased to confine our persons, and, as it were, enclose our minds, so as to prevent them from losing themselves by wandering unrestrained.* [Institutes, p. 142]

## ALLIS ANALYSIS

At this point, it seems a good idea to hear from another able expositor who lived closer to our own time: **Oswald T. Allis** (1880-1973), the author of *God Spake By Moses, An Exposition of the Pentateuch*. **Cornelius Van Til** said of Allis at his funeral,

*When modern philosophy and science spoke of the Old Testament as being of necessity nothing more than the expression of the aspirations of men come into the world by the blind force of chance groping in a bottomless and shoreless sea of relativism, then Dr. Allis showed all the world that men of science and philosophy, as well as all other men, need the very self-attesting Christ of Scripture whom they reject if they are not to fall into utter confusion with eternal death their final destiny. (The Works of Cornelius Van Til, CD-ROM, 1997)*

Such a statement should make clear why we'd benefit from the fruit of Allis' labor. He engaged Bible-scoffing relativists and evolutionists head-on, and he was effective in showing them both the errors of their ways and the Way of Truth. In the next few pages, we'll bring in citations from *God Spake By Moses* in the order in which they're found in his comments on **Gen 1-11**. All of his words will appear in italics, and my comments will be bracketed; bold emphasis also is mine.

*For while it is undoubtedly true that modern scientific research has thrown much welcome light upon the Bible, upon our knowledge of Bible lands and Bible times, it is nevertheless true **that the Bible is its own best interpreter**, and that the aim of the Bible student should always be to **find out what the Bible actually teaches and not try to impose upon it meanings** which, however attractive and well-established they may **seem** to be, are clearly not the meanings which the Bible itself warrants and approves... It is the hope of the writer that this little book will help its readers to appreciate more fully the **wonderful self-evidencing unity and authority of the Bible**. (preface)*

[Amen to *all* of that! It's the shared hope of *this* writer of *this* little book as well]

(i) *The Summary Statement: "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth." Every word is important. Here we have the starting point (in the beginning), the ultimate Reality (God), and the phenomenal universe (heaven and earth) brought into being (created) by Him. These are the ultimates; and the Ultimate of ultimates is God. (p. 9)*

*"Create" (bara) is a rare word in the Old Testament, and it is always used of an act or activity of God..."The heaven and the earth" cover what we call the universe...(p. 9)*

*...verse 2 describes "the earth" proleptically [calls it what it will soon become] as consisting of **unorganized matter (chaos) before the acts of the six creative days transformed it into a beautifully ordered cosmos.** (p. 9)*

[Note: he treats these verses as part of a historical narrative that establishes ultimates and reality in God's universe (cosmos); created-out-of-nothing matter is turned into everything in six days]

*It was claimed that verse 2 represents a vast timeless interval in which the "geological ages" can be placed and regarded as preceding a six-day re-creation of the present earth. It finds **no clear support elsewhere in Scripture**, and is faced with serious difficulty in interpreting verses 14-19. See Appendix. (p. 10)*

[The Appendix is worth seeing, indeed, as it's an excellent refutation of the gap/interval/ruin-restoration hypothesis; I'm tempted to quote it, too, at length, but will hold off in the hope that the reader will track down a personal copy of Allis' book.]

[On the “Detailed Statement (verses 3-31)” ]: *Science deals with second causes: here the First Cause is the almighty Actor, and second causes are ignored...Scientists, who speak in terms of light years, and add cipher to cipher in estimating the time of the beginning of things, ridicule the idea of twenty-four-hour days. But when they multiply thousands to millions and millions to billions and billions to trillions, figures practically cease to have any meaning, and **they expose their own ignorance...this adding on of ciphers is absurd.** It is a distinct feature of the miracles of the Bible that they are limited neither by time nor space. To “**evolve**” **water into wine could not be done any more successfully in a million years or in a thousand million than in a “day.” Natural process could not accomplish it at all.** (p. 10-11)*

[A couple of important precepts are included here: 1) Science *must* deal with second causes only, since the First Cause and the pre-historical past are not subject to observation and repeatable experimentation and testing (the Beginner and the beginning can’t be reproduced by empirical science, so those areas are entirely philosophical and speculative without *supernatural revelation*). 2) When science cuts itself off from anything supernatural, it cuts itself off from any *totally-natural* process performing the miracles that evolution actually requires; can’t be done!]

[Full disclosure: Allis does cave in a bit on this page. He admits that **Ex 20:8-11** “suggests” days of twenty-four hours, but goes on to say that we “can not be sure, and must not be dogmatic.” This is essentially the same comment that **Francis Schaeffer** made in his own commentary. While I have enormous respect for both because of their Christian abilities, efforts, and teachings in general, I’ll still maintain that both blew it in this regard. When Christ Himself etches into stone a six-day creation period that’s directly linked to the meaning of the Fourth Commandment, go ahead—*be* dogmatic! If Christ has established the truth of the matter, the only Christian thing to do is to honor Him by acknowledging it and obeying it; shrinking back from it or shading it is only *disobedience*.

Fear, trust, and obey God, and do *not* fear man! Man's puny, creaturely favor is not worth courting.]

*The now popular planetesimal or tidal theory which regards the earth as a mere by-product of the sun, produced from gases drawn forth from it by a passing star, makes **tremendous demands on time and chance. There is no room for chance in a God-controlled universe.*** (p. 11)

[He's come back to his senses! This general idea goes all the way back to Swedenborg and Kant.]

*The law "After its kind" is to govern the propagation and increase of all the various forms of living things. It indicates that they are distinct from one another, and are to preserve their distinctness. **This law, that "like begets like," is one of the most obvious facts of everyday experience. It has been the aim of evolutionists for many years to prove that like begets unlike; and so to bridge all the gaps which separate the different forms of existence, one from the other, in order that all may be evolved ultimately from "protoplasm." But the gaps are still there. Naturalistic evolution is as much an "unproved hypothesis" today as it ever was** [This will always be the case!]. Those who reject the Biblical doctrine of creation are shut up to it as a "working hypothesis." **But those who accept the robust theism of the Bible do not need to succumb to its spell or submit to its tyranny.*** (p. 12)

[Bible-trusters are *not* shut up to the "working hypothesis," but open to the truth that will set us free—**John 8:32.**]

*The six days of creation are followed by the day of rest. God rested from all His work. This was not the rest demanded by exhaustion. It was the complacent resting which follows a finished task. God hallowed this day*

*as the day of His rest. Note that this brief account omits many things. It says nothing about angels or about Satan.* (p. 13)

[As he also notes in the Appendix, “Of such a pre-Adamite theory the Bible knows nothing.”]

*“Day” in verse 5 is the light as distinct from the darkness. It is used of the six creative days each of which has an evening and a morning. In ii.4 it comprises the whole **hexameron** [literally, “six days” in Greek] (“in the day that the LORD God made earth and heaven”). “Waters” (verse 2) is used of the unorganized matter (chaos) out of which **the cosmos was formed in the course of the hexameron.** (p. 14)*

With that, with Allis reiterating the two-stage process of the six-day creation period, the *hexameron*, we’ll take our leave. Note that even though he’s careful to “not be dogmatic” about the obvious meanings of “day” in **Gen 1:1-2:3** and **Gen 2:4**, respectively, he clearly believes and asserts what has been contended for throughout this work: namely, a literal Creation Week period of six ordinary, approximately 24-hour days, the kind of day we humans have been experiencing since Day Six, and the kind of day that is easily understood without resorting to imagination or engineered deception.

**Believe the God who can not lie in *all* that He says, and give Him due honor and glory.**

## TURNING TO VAN TIL

It would be hard to name a more astute observer-thinker-apologist of the 20th Century than **Cornelius Van Til** (1895-1987). An entire “school” of Christian apologetics (defense of the faith) has grown out of his teachings (presuppositionalism, or *Van Tillian* apologetics). His system is thoroughly Biblical in that it *presupposes* (assumes) that all human beings capable of reason recognize that there is a Creator-creature distinction, and that the One True God is self-attesting through general revelation. **Romans 1** is ultra-clear on this. Everyone knows via God-given conscience that there’s a Creator from whom we derive our existence; to Him, then, we are also accountable. The other fundamental aspect of Van Til’s teaching is that the natural man, the unbeliever, will fight that notion in every area of life. We’ve seen ample proof of that assertion in our look at the trail of lies that is Evillusion. The point of attack has always been the elimination of the Creator-creature distinction, with the ultimate goal being the banishment of God from the cosmos He created. Evillusionists have had it in mind from the start to succeed first in this, and then all “scientific inquiry” could be undertaken and all “laws” established by their say-so.

Van Til analyzed the evolutionary approach and the sheer incompatibility of godless “science” (actually *philosophy*) with God-defined reality based in hard facts. All of the following excerpts are from *The Philosophy of Evolution*, an article found on the CD-ROM, *The Works of Cornelius Van Til*. All of these words are his, with the exception of bracketed comments and bold emphasis, which are mine.

*“Evolution as a scientific question cannot be separated from the question of cosmic evolution, as the early generation of evolutionists clearly saw. Huxley, Spencer, Fiske and others were very well aware of the fact that **they were seeking to introduce a new philosophy of life. They realized that their view said something very definite about the origin of the whole universe and therefore said something very definite about God.**”*

*“Of what nature is reality if evolution be true? In what sort of God may we believe if evolution is true? We cannot state this matter fully, but we can say that if evolution be true, there is at best a finite God [“god,” since non-biblical]. Some evolutionists who wish to point out that their theories are not harmful to religion seek to show us that God is some sort of principle of coordination in this universe. There are many varieties of this sort of God.” [Like that of Descartes, Kant, the Deists, Spinoza, and Einstein]*

*“...the only type of purpose to which evolutionists of one school or another may hold is, in the last analysis, a purpose that falls **within** the universe and is therefore itself **subject to the law of chance that governs the universe as a whole**. The only conception of purpose that is **not** subject to the law of chance is the conception of **purpose which proceeds from a God who is the creator of the universe and therefore the creator of the so-called laws of chance**. Now **in such a God the evolutionist cannot believe**. **He would be giving up evolution if he did**.”*

[You can't have both: a Creator-Sovereign before, over, and above the creation, *and* universal rule by the non-entity called “chance.” Evolution's “trinity” is matter-time-chance.]

[On “the hopelessness of defending the philosophy of evolution]: *“The evolutionist **must say that God cannot possibly exist**. **He must say that rationality is subject to chance in all reality**...For if this universe is subject to the rationality of God who is its creator, it would be **impossible to say anything that is really true** about even the smallest thing in this world **without taking God into consideration**. In that case the very existence of things, as well as their meaning, would depend upon their relation to God. **If, therefore, you left God out of consideration in studying this world, you would be engaged in false abstraction and would be bound to emerge with a distorted picture of reality.**”*

[See **Rom 1**, especially **verses 21-22, 25, 28**, and **Eph 2:12**; no truth without God!]

*“Now the evolutionist has been doing just that. He has **assumed** what he should **prove**...He has **assumed**, to begin with, the existence of **facts as independent of God**. He has **assumed**, in the second place, the whole of his epistemology. [grounds of knowledge/how obtained] He has **assumed** that the human **mind exists independently of God** and can do its interpreting independently of God. But this is what he should prove...Now **on the evolutionist’s [own] contention** that he is **dealing only with a truly empirical or scientific method, such assumption of that which is to be proved is an unpardonable sin.**”*

[He doesn’t play by his own rules; he needs to prove his assertion, rather than assume its truth; it, too, must be proved by observed evidence, and no amount of pseudo-scientific babble can make it so without it; the root problem is that the evolutionist has assumed that the human mind is completely capable of knowing all that can be known without God, the One who has made all and knows all.]

*“...the evolutionist has to make and does make a **universal negative conclusion** on the basis of a little stream of experience. [A universal negative conclusion requires *total omniscience* of every speck in the universe, totally *impossible* for any *finite* being, and an attribute of the *infinite and omnipresent* God alone] When he takes for granted that **anything** happens by chance, he really takes for granted that **everything** happens by chance. He thus negates God....all his reasoning about anything is based upon a short span of **human experience of at most a few thousand years**. [Van Til comes down squarely in the six-day creationist camp] How is it possible that evolutionists are able to predict, on such a basis, [without knowledge imparted from an omniscient Source] what can and what cannot happen for millions of years to come? Yet this is exactly what every evolutionist does.”*

*“Creation is, we believe, the only philosophy of origins that does not destroy human reason itself. It is really not a question as to which position is more reasonable. Evolution and creation give no quarter and expect no quarter. They are bound up with mutually exclusive philosophies of life. Creation is bound by that philosophy of life which says that rationality must be absolute or we could have no intelligent experience about anything. Evolution is bound up with that philosophy of life which says that experience can float in the void.” [Without God, there’s no anchoring in reality, only shifting “truths.”]*

*“...philosophy of evolution is inherently self-contradictory; it destroys human reason itself.”*

## 7

### POST-DATA PRINCIPLES

Having made our observations and gathered our data, we can make our valid conclusions. We’ll have gained the vantage ground of truth only if we’ve aligned our thinking with that of The Truth Himself, Jesus Christ, The Creator (**John 14:6; Col 1:16-17; Heb 1:2**). And that means aligning with *everything* that He’s revealed to us in The Bible. God *hates* compromise, fence-sitting, and wishy-washy attitudes (**Rev 3:15-16**). But God, in His faithfulness, shows mercy to a thousand generations of those who love Him and keep His commandments (**Deut 7:9; John 14:15**). It’s great to be on *God’s* side!

But what about the other side; how are the evillusionary God-opposers faring? Even if we just go by their materialist-naturalist “science,” not so good. They aren’t doing well at all. Hear from some of their own:

**Charles Darwin**, one year before his death: *But then with me the horrid doubt always arises whether the convictions of man’s mind, which has been developed from the mind of the lower animals, are of any value or at all trustworthy. Would any one*

*trust in the convictions of a monkey's mind, if there are any convictions in such a mind?* [Yes, how about that? Bold emphasis mine.]

**Sir Fred Hoyle**, 100 years later: *The chance that higher life forms might have emerged in this way is comparable with the chance that a tornado sweeping through a junk yard might assemble a Boeing 747 from the materials therein.* [Matter without organizing information is helpless and hopelessly dead.]

And what of the vaunted fossil record, the evidence of *billions of transitional forms* that would put Darwin over the top? (The absence of such evidence meaning the *deathblow* for “his” “theory?”).

**Colin Patterson:** *I fully agree...on the lack of direct illustration of evolutionary transitions in my book. If I knew of any, fossil or living, I would certainly have included them...I will lay it on the line—**there is not one such fossil** for which one could make a watertight argument.*

That statement stands true today, as not even one undeniable transitional-form fossil has been found within the millions upon millions unearthed to date. Evolutionary theory calls for millions upon millions of between-species fossils, but not one genuine specimen has turned up. *Supposed* possibilities and *hoaxes* have come and gone, but each has proved to be another embarrassment for “science.”

**T.N. Tahmisian:** *Scientists who go about teaching that evolution is a fact of life are great conmen, and the story they are telling **may be the greatest hoax ever.** In explaining evolution, we do not have one iota of fact.*

COMPARE THE LIES (LEFT) WITH THE REALITY (RIGHT)

Universe/Cosmos all that ever was, is, ever will be

All that truly exists is natural matter (material atoms); there is no *supernatural* realm, no soul

Only completely naturalistic explanations are valid

“God” is only a concept or social construct that has evolved by purely natural chemical processes

Deep time+chance, beneficial mutations—selected by nature—can yield life from non-life

Changes are undirected and have no goal/purpose, other than upward evolution

Objective morality is a myth, for it, too, is an ever-evolving construct of ever-changing society

“Sin” against a “god” who doesn’t exist is a fallacy, and was invented as a social-control device

All that is was made by the self-existing, living God

Both spiritual/non-material/unseen and physical/material/observable worlds exist as true realms

Some things *require* a supernatural explanation

God is the source of all creaturely capability, including rational processes and social interaction

Not a chance, *ever*; life only comes from life; mutations *non*-beneficial, with *loss* of information

Everything in God’s universe has a reason for existence and is part of God’s overarching plan/design

Morality is objective because it’s been established and decreed by the sovereign, holy Creator-King

Every transgression of God’s real Law is a real sin against His real holiness; real consequences result

## COMPARE THE LIES (LEFT) WITH THE REALITY (RIGHT)

The bible is a book written by mere men, so it has no authority above any other written work

The bible is a book of religion, and not science

Science has proved the great age of the universe

Science has proved that new species are constantly being developed, despite any biblical implications

The biblical flood was myth/local/tranquil

The present is the key to the past

Soul-less man is only a little higher than the apes, and has evolved vertically from the first living cell on up to varying subspecies (races) of homo sapiens

Faith in the supernatural is irrational and counter-productive to earthly progress

The Bible is the Word of the living, eternal God in written form, delivered through inspired men

The Bible is God's true Word on all that's in it

Only The Creator knows the age of His creation

Science hasn't even defined species; the Bible speaks of kinds, within which variation occurs

Historic, worldwide, year-long flood was *catastrophic*

The past is the key to the present

Man is only a little lower than the angels, and made in God's image, complete with body and soul, and all one race, descended from Noah, back to Adam

Faith in its Giver is essential for true progress from the lowly/temporal to the heavenly and eternal

**Charles Darwin**—in his autobiography, he equated the child’s belief in God with the monkey’s instinctive fear and hatred of a snake; this passage was later deleted by his son, Francis, at the insistence of his widow. [Ian Taylor, p. 450, note 22]

**Bertrand Russell**—*The universe is vast and men are but tiny specks on an insignificant planet.*

*The life of man is a long march through the night, surrounded by invisible foes, tortured by weariness and pain, towards a goal that few can hope to reach, and where none may tarry long.*

**Stephen Jay Gould**—*Homo sapiens is but a tiny, late-arising twig on life’s enormously arborescent bush—a small bud that would almost surely not appear a second time if we could replant the bush from seed and let it grow again. [Who’s “we?”]*

**Jesus Christ**—**Let the little children come to Me. Don’t stop them, for the kingdom of God belongs to such as these. Mark 10:14 (HCSB)**

The Creator made humans in His own image and cared so much that He died for multitudes of them.

**The LORD is my shepherd; He leads me; Though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil; I will dwell in the house of the LORD forever. Psa 23**

**Aren’t five sparrows sold for two pennies? Yet not one of them is forgotten in God’s sight. Indeed, the hairs of your head are all counted. Don’t be afraid; you are worth more than many sparrows! Luke 12:6-7 HCSB**

COMPARE THE EVILLUSIONARY “GOSPEL” (LEFT) WITH GOD’S (RIGHT)

**Margaret Sanger**—*No Gods! No Masters!*; “exterminate the negroes”; eliminate “human weeds” and the “dead weight of human waste”

(Various)—Men and women are “slime”; “evolved pond scum”; “fungus”; “tailless apes”; “at best a monkey shaved”; “products of editing, rather than of authorship”

**Richard Dawkins**—*Any fetus is less human than an adult pig.*

*Teaching children creationism is child abuse.*

*We live in a universe which has no design, no purpose, no evil, and no good. Nothing but blind, pitiless indifference.*

[On evolution leading to a moral vacuum]: *All I can say is, That’s just tough. We have to face up to the truth.*

**You shall fear the LORD your God; you shall serve Him—Deut 10:20;** He has redeemed us out of every tribe, tongue, people, nation:  
**Rev 5:9**

**Let Us make man in Our image—Gen 1:26; God formed man of the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and man became a living soul—Gen 2:7**

Jesus permitted the demons to enter the pigs, and the herd ran down to the lake and drowned—**Matt 8; Mark 5; Luke 8**, proving once again that God is protective of the human race above all else. He wove each of us in our mother’s womb, and we are fearfully and wonderfully made—**Psalm 139; The son of Seth, the son of Adam, the son of God—Luke 3:38. But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become [be restored as] the children of God, to those who believe in His name; born not of blood, ...but of God—John 1:12-13**

## SUMMARY

Let's briefly review and wrap things up for this work. We'll begin by bringing back those pertinent quotes from Matthew Henry—“*The faith of humble Christians understands this better than the fancy of the most learned men*”—and George Orwell: “*Some ideas are so stupid that only intellectuals believe them.*” Hopefully, the reader now realizes that this stepping-stone journey of 400+ years (1605 to present) has demonstrated the truth in both of those statements. All along the way, we saw intellectual “leaders” of organized church bodies and schools of “higher” learning abandon what they knew to be true—through conscience, general revelation, life-experience, and even special, Biblical revelation—to run off to aid and abet the no-God cause. Some, it must be said, were only sleepwalking; they had little consciousness of the lasting damage they inflicted or set in motion through their stumbling. But as things shook out, *real* damage they did, especially every time that capitulating to SCIENCE equated to establishing and/or promoting the *pseudo-science of evolution*. True science is the *ministerial servant* of the true God. The false, so-called “science” upon which evolution is based is only unprovable speculation, yet it holds itself forth as *real* science, and therefore, magisterial: Bow down! No questions allowed!

Time after time, we saw—and still see—the blind leading the blind. “Leaders” jump on the intellectual bandwagon, headed for who-knows-where, and they yank innocent bystanders aboard. As they join the procession, a few might think to ask, “By the way, where is this thing headed?” The question goes completely unanswered or is dismissively, carelessly, or incorrectly answered, and the wagon rolls on; only the driver knows the intended destination: a godless, undirected universe. Beyond that lies what the blind driver won't (can't) foresee: a lake of fire that will never be quenched. Over-dramatic? No, it's just that serious. Evolutionary “theory” and the sheer reality of God's created universe are completely incompatible and irreconcilable. Acknowledge the true God or a *godless* fantasy of sinful, doomed men.

Ray Comfort supplies us with an apt quote on p. 232 of *The Charles Darwin Bible*, where he's quoted Swedish embryologist, Soren Lovtrup:

*I suppose that nobody will deny that it is a great misfortune if an entire branch of science becomes addicted to a false theory. But this is what has happened in biology...I believe that one day the Darwinian myth will be ranked the greatest deceit in the history of science.*

Agreeing 100%, I can only add that *ALL* branches of *godless* science are addicted to false theories that may hold sway today, but tomorrow will go away. The truth will come out, and the sinful misleaders will be exposed (**Num 32:23**). You simply cannot go against the grain of God's universe and get away with it for long. In the end, only true science—science that begins with God and reverential fear of Him—can hope to withstand overturning. Only God-directed science can succeed. The Christian *knows* this to be true, and even the agnostic/atheist suspects this. The unbeliever sees the wall, but speeds towards it, pretending, against knowledge, that it isn't there. But the wall is there, and the fatal impact is real. Eternal-life-giving, essential knowledge starts with the fear of the Lord and it culminates in perfect bliss. There is *no* good and *no* future in Evillusion. Abandon it or abandon all hope.

**Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are [exist] and were created—Rev 4:11 (KJV)**

## BIBLIOGRAPHY & RECOMMENDED RESOURCES

1. Print resources directly consulted in the process of writing this book, listed alphabetically by author

---

- Allis, Oswald T. 1951. *God Spoke By Moses*. Presbyterian And Reformed Publishing. Phillipsburg, NJ.
- Berkhof, Louis. 1938 (1996 edition). *Systematic Theology*. Eerdmans. Grand Rapids, MI.
- Calvin, John. 1563. *Commentary On Genesis*, as translated and edited by John King, M.D.
- 1559. *Institutes of the Christian Religion*, English translation by Henry Beveridge. Eerdmans. GR, MI
- Camp, Ashby L. 2006. *A View Of Creation*. Online article accessed December, 2013.
- Chaffey, Tim and Lisle, Jason. 2008. *Old-Earth Creationism On Trial*. Master Books. Green Forest, AR.
- Christian History #107, Debating Darwin: How Christians Responded*. 2013. Christian History Institute. Worcester, PA.
- Comfort, Ray. 2009. *The Charles Darwin Bible (NT)*. Holman Bible Publishers. Nashville, TN.
- DeRosa, Tom. 2006. *Evolution's Fatal Fruit*. Coral Ridge Ministries. Fort Lauderdale, FL.
- Green, Jay P. 1986. *The Interlinear Bible* (1 volume ed.). Hendrickson. Peabody, MA.
- Grun, Bernard. 1991. *The Timetables of History* (3rd ed.). Simon & Schuster. New York, NY.
- Ham, et al. 2009. *A Pocket Guide To Charles Darwin*. Answers In Genesis. Petersburg, KY.
- 2006. *Exposing Progressive Creation*. Answers In Genesis. Hebron, KY.
- Ham, Ken and Ware, A. Charles. 2007. *Darwin's Plantation*. Master Books. Green Forest, AR.
- Henry, Matthew. (in the public domain) *Concise Commentary on the Whole Bible*. Moody Press ed.
- Holman Christian Standard Bible (“HCSB”). 2003. Holman Bible Publishers. Nashville, TN.
- Hunter, Cornelius G. 2007. *Science's Blind Spot*. Brazos Press. Grand Rapids, MI.
- Huse, Scott M. 1983 (1993 edition). *The Collapse Of Evolution*. Baker Books. Grand Rapids, MI.
- Isaacs, Darek. 2009. *The Extinction Of Evolution*. Bridge-Logos. Alachua, FL.
- Kelly, Douglas F. 1997. *Creation And Change*. Christian Focus/Mentor. Bristol, Great Britain.
- Kennedy, D. James. 2000. *Solving Bible Mysteries*. Thomas Nelson, Inc. Nashville, TN.
- Leupold, H.C. 1942. *Exposition of Genesis, Volume 1*. The Wartburg Press. Grand Rapids, MI.
- Lisle, Jason. 2009. *The Ultimate Proof of Creation*. Master Books. Green Forest, AR.
- Mortenson, Terry. 2005. *Millions Of Years* (pamphlet). Answers In Genesis. Hebron, KY.
- 2011. Online excerpts from his book, *The Turning Point*. [answersingenesis.org](http://answersingenesis.org), accessed 11/2013.
- Noebel, David A. 1991. *Understanding The Times*. Harvest House Publishers. Eugene, OR.
- Pipa, Jr, Joseph A. and Hall, David W. (editors). 1999 (2005 edition). *Did God Create In 6 Days?* Tolle Lege Press. White Hall, WV.
- Rhodes, Ron. 2004. *The 10 Things You Should Know About the Creation Vs. Evolution Debate*. Harvest House. Eugene, OR.
- Sarfati, Jonathan. 2004. *Refuting Compromise*. Master Books. Green Forest, AR.
- 2002. *Refuting Evolution 2*. Master Books. Green Forest, AR.
- Schaeffer, Francis A. 1985. *Genesis in Space and Time*. CD-ROM by Crossway. Westchester, IL.
- Sproul, R.C., General Editor. 1995. *New Geneva Study Bible*. Thomas Nelson, Inc. Nashville, TN.
- Strong, James. 1995. *The New Strong's Exhaustive Concordance of the Bible*. Thomas Nelson. Nashville, TN.
- Taylor, Ian T. 1984. *In The Minds Of Men*. TFE Publishing. Toronto, Canada.
- Taylor, Paul S. 1995. *The Illustrated ORIGINS Answer Book*. Eden Communications. Gilbert, AZ.
- Weeks, Noel. 1972, 1979, 1998. Online articles accessed 11/2013: [answersingenesis.org](http://answersingenesis.org)

## BIBLIOGRAPHY & RECOMMENDED RESOURCES, page 2

- Whitcomb, John C. and Morris, Henry. 2011. *The Genesis Flood, 50th Anniversary Edition*. P&R. Phillipsburg, NJ.
- Wikipedia: <http://en.wikipedia.org>. 2013. Various articles accessed October-December, 2013.
- Young, Robert. [no date] *Young's Analytical Concordance to the Bible*. Hendrickson. Peabody, MA.

### 2. Additional recommended print resources which I've read in the past (may have had influence as well)

---

- Ackerman, Paul D. 1986. *It's A Young World After All* (updated 2002 web version). Baker Books. Grand Rapids, MI.
- Comfort, Ray. 2009. *Nothing Created Everything*. WND Books. Los Angeles, CA.
- Cooper, Bill. 1995. *After The Flood*. New Wine Press. West Sussex, England.
- Fields, Weston. 2005. *Unformed and Unfilled*. Master Books. Green Forest, AR.
- Ham, Ken. 1987. *The Lie: Evolution*. Creation Science Foundation.
- Ham, Sarfati, Wieland, et al. (Answers In Genesis CD-ROM collection of writings). 2001. *Creation...A Shattering Critique Of The PBS / Nova 'Evolution' Series*. Answers In Genesis. Florence, KY.
- Johnson, Philip E. 1995. *Reason in the Balance*. InterVarsity Press. Downers Grove, IL.
- Wieland, Carl. 1996 (2002 Edition). *Stones And Bones*. Answers In Genesis. Florence, KY.

### 3. DVDs consulted and recommended (listed alphabetically, by organization)

---

- American Vision: *The Religion of Evolution*. Gary DeMar, 2005.
- Answers In Genesis: *Arguments Creationists Should Not Use*. Jonathan Sarfati, 2004.
- The Bible Explains Dinosaurs*. Ken Ham, 2002.
- Chemicals to Living Cell: Fantasy or Science?* Jonathan Sarfati, 2004.
- The Digestive System*. David Menton, 2011.
- Dynamic Life: Changes in Living Things*. Carl Wieland, 2004.
- Fearfully & Wonderfully Made*. David Menton, 2004.
- Frankenstein Foods and Fetuses*. Don Batten, 2004.
- Genesis: The Key to Reclaiming the Culture*. Ken Ham, 2002.
- The Hearing Ear and the Seeing Eye*. David Menton, 2004.
- Inherently Wind*. David Menton, 2004.
- The Intricacies of Flight*. Andy McIntosh, 2004.
- Lucy: She's No Lady!* David Menton, 2003.
- The Mammoth and the Ice Age*. Michael Oard, 2004.
- Noah's Flood: Washing Away Millions of Years*. Terry Mortenson, 2006.
- Only One Blood*. Ken Ham, 2002.
- Putting the Puzzle Pieces Together: Global Tectonics*. John Baumgardner, 2006.
- The Six Days of Creation*. Ken Ham, 2002.
- Three Ways to Make an Apeman*. David Menton, 2014.
- What is the 'Best' Evidence That God Created?* Carl Kerby, 2004.
- Where Did God Come From?* Ken Ham, 2002.
- Why Won't They Listen?* Ken Ham, 2002.

3. (cont.) DVDs consulted and recommended (listed alphabetically, by organization)

---

- Answers In Genesis: *Wild, Wild Weather: The Genesis Flood And The Ice Age*. Larry Vardiman, 2005.  
 [These (3)—in this section—are a bit more technical, and I'm **no longer recommending in 2025**]:  
     *Created Cosmos*. Jason Lisle, 2007.  
     *The Relevance Of Physics, Cosmology, & Astronomy For Young-Earth Creation*.  
     Keith Wanser, 2004.  
     *Starlight And Time*. Russell Humphreys, 2005.
- Bible Discipleship Ministries: *Creation Proclaims, Volume 1: Climbers And Creepers*, 2009.  
     *Creation Proclaims, Volume 2: Flight And Spike*, 2010.  
     *Creation Proclaims, Volume 3: Silent Hunters*, 2011.  
     *Incredible Creatures That Defy Evolution, I-II-III*, 2000.
- Cloud Ten Pictures: *Dragons or Dinosaurs?*, 2010.
- Coral Ridge Ministries (now Truth In Action): *Darwin's Deadly Legacy*, 2006.
- Creation Ministries International (CMI): *Codes And Creation*, Calvin Smith  
     *Creation Not Confusion*, Gary Bates  
     *Dinosaurs & The Bible*, David Catchpoole  
     *From Atheist To Creationist*, Calvin Smith  
     *God The Master Designer*, Jonathan Sarfati  
     *In The Middle Of The Action*, John Hartnett  
     *Leaving Your Brains At The Church Door?*, Jonathan Sarfati
- Creation Truth Foundation: *The Truth About Dinosaurs*, G. Thomas Sharp
- Eternal Productions: *God Of Wonders*, John Whitcomb, 2008.
- Moody Institute Of Science: *The Wonders Of God's Creation* (10-part set), 2005. [Most pertinent parts are 1-3 and 9-10; 4 & 8 are devotional; 5-6 on natural forces.]
- NPN Videos/Exploration Films: *Life's Story, Life's Story 2*, 2004 & 2006.
- Premise Media/Vivendi Ent.: *Expelled: No Intelligence Allowed*, Ben Stein, 2008.
- Truth In Science/Timeless Life: *Set In Stone*, Andrew Snelling-JohnWhitmore-Paul Garner (Youth-oriented): The T.R.U.T.H. Group, *T.R.U.T.H. About The Dinosaurs*, 2008.

4. Helpful Audio

---

- Ham, Ken. 1996. *Genesis and the Authority of Scripture*. Answers in Genesis Ministries. Florence, KY.
- Lisle, Jason. 2010. *Evolution and Logical Fallacies*. Answers in Genesis. Petersburg, KY.
- Stevens, Edward E. (date?) 1. *Evolution Is Impossible* 2. *Creation In Six Days* 3. *How Old Is The Earth?* 4. *How Long Did The Patriarchs Live?* 5. *Was There A Worldwide Flood?* International Preterist Association. Bradford, PA.

# SCRIPTURE REFERENCE INDEX

<b>Genesis (Gen)</b>		9—11	41
1	13,55,99	10—11	114,131
1:1	25,46,127	10:32-11:9	113
1:1-2	32,59,103,105	18	50
1:2	107,166	22	84
1:1-3	136	25	156
1:1-2:3	46-47,51-52,62,85,116,158,166,175	<b>Exodus (Ex)</b>	
1:1-9:15	113	7—14	66
1:2-31	172	20:8-11	48,167-169,173
1:3	136	20:11	25,46-47,52,62,106,167
1:3-8	26	31:15-17	52,167
1:3-31	107,173	31:17	62,106
1:7-16	25	31:18	49
1:11,12,21,24,25	84	33—34	49-50
1:14-19	54	<b>Leviticus (Lev)</b> 11:14-29	84
1:21,24,25	27	<b>Numbers (Num)</b>	
1:26-27	143,184	11:23	150
1:28	170	23:19	28,76-77,106
1:31	26,32,82,107,170	32:23	186
1—2	41,127,131,168	<b>Deuteronomy (Deut)</b>	
1—8	82	4:2 & 12:32	29,87,103-104
1—11	31,63,79,87,136-137,142,158,171	7:9	179
2:1-2	170	8	84
2:1-3	26	10:4	49-50
2:3	48,61,113,115	10:20	184
2:4	46-47,175	14:13-18	84
2:7	184	29:29	85
3	83,92,106,127,170	30:14	42
3:3	81	32	134
3:15	92	<b>Joshua (Josh)</b> 5:13-15	50
3:20	113	<b>1 Samuel (1 Sam)</b>	
3:22	105	1 & 16	84
5—11	114	2:30	122
5 & 11	168	5	103
5:5	51-52,106	8:7	13-14
6—9 , 10—11	34,131	15:29	28,106
6—8	83,116	16:7	35,140
6:5	35	<b>2 Samuel (2 Sam)</b> 22:31	122
6:20 & 7:14	84	<b>2 Kings</b> 18:21	27
7:21-23	113	<b>1 Chronicles (1 Chr)</b> 21	104
8:19	84	<b>2 Chronicles (2 Chr)</b> 33	84
8:22	55	<b>Nehemiah (Neh)</b> 9:6	2,13

# SCRIPTURE REFERENCE INDEX

<b>Job</b>		19:2	90
5:7	125	19:21	102
12 & 37	84	26:4-5	15,37
<b>Psalms (Psa)</b>		26:11	108
(several)	84,134	29:23	100
2	11,28	29:25	58,65
2:4	14	30:5-6	13,29,87,103,112
19	122	<b>Ecclesiastes (Ecc) 1:4</b>	54,83
21:8-9	66		
23	183	<b>Isaiah (Isa)</b>	
33	13	2:5	136
33:6,9	26	8:20	25,102,118,134,136
66:7	12	20:5-6	84
69:5	12	36:6	27
72:5,17	54	40:8	30,42
89:36-37	54	40:28	48
96:10	54	45	84
104:5	54,83	45:7	136
111:10	24,45,72,136	45:9,12	8
115:3	89	50:2	150
118:8	136	55:11	62,108,150
119:90	54,83	57:20-58:1	37
119:105,130	136	59:1	150
135:6	89	60:19-20	136
139	184	65:16	28
148	54-55	<b>Jeremiah (Jer)</b>	
<b>Proverbs (Prov)</b>		6:16	72,90
1:7 & 9:10	24,45,72,88,100,136	9:23-24	156
3:34	157	10:11-16	99
8:13	100,157	10:23	102
11:2	100	17:9	35
12:15	28	31	53-55
13:10	100		
14:3	100	<b>Daniel (Dan)</b>	
14:5	106	3	68
14:12	28,72	4	84
15:11	12	7	82
16:9	102		
16:18	100	<b>Hosea (Hos) 4:17-18</b>	36
16:20	112		
16:25	72	<b>Malachi (Mal) 3:18</b>	122
16:33	84		

# SCRIPTURE REFERENCE INDEX

<b>Matthew (Matt)</b>		1:12-13	184
5—7	84	1:14	150
7	36	3, 8, 12	136
8	184	3:8	150
10	84	3:19	133
12:25,30	24	3:31-34	134
12:30	11	3:31	69
18:6-7	150	5:17	61
19:4	128	5:21-23	147
19:6	29	5:22-24	90,131
23:8-10	115	5:34	134
24:35	150	6:68	62
24:37-39	103	7:28-29	69
28:19-20	150	8:6-8	50
		8:23	69
		8:32	28,174
<b>Mark</b>		8:44	66-67
2:27	50	10	63
5	184	12:43	58
10:6	128	13:23	50
10:9	29	14:6	10,42,65,69,72,90,165,179
10:14	183	14:15	179
		20:27-29	50
<b>Luke</b>		21:20	50
1 & 18	84		
2:32	136	<b>Acts</b>	
3:38	184	4:25	28
6	36	9:5	11
8	184	13:48	150
10:42	62,160	14:17	126
12:6-7	183	17	84
17:1-2	149-150	17:24	99
17:26-27	103	17:26	41,113
19:14	21		
		<b>Romans (Rom)</b>	
<b>John</b>		1—15	80
(all)	80,131	1—5	87
1	13,70,134,136	1—3	12
1:1	51,150	1—2	63
1:1-5	69	1	13,99,122,176,178
1:3	7	1:18-23	99
1:11	21		

# SCRIPTURE REFERENCE INDEX

<b>Romans (Rom) cont.</b>		<b>Ephesians (Eph)</b>	
1:18-32	12	1:11	84
1:20	128	2:12	178
1:20-23	72	3:21	54,83
1:20-32	35-36	4:14	57
1:21,30	28	5	136
1:21-32	77	<b>Philippians (Phil) 4:19</b>	84
3:4	77,108	<b>Colossians (Col)</b>	
3:8	108,154	1	70
5	83,92,106,170	1:13-17	81
6:21	72	1:15,19	49
8	84	1:16,17	7,13,26,61,86,90,132,179
8:7	92	2:3	67,88
10:8	42	2:8	28,122
15:4	112	2:9	49,112
<b>1 Corinthians (1 Cor)</b>		<b>2 Thessalonians (2 Thes)</b>	
1:20	156	2:10	99
1:24,30	67,88	2:10-12	65-66
1:26-30	156-157	<b>1 Timothy (1 Tim)</b>	
2:14	92	2:5	104
8:2-3	122	5:8	148
8:6	7	6:16	99
9	108	6:20	133
10:4	134	<b>2 Timothy (2 Tim)</b>	
14:33	52,55,105	3:5	36
14:40	167	3:16	13,62,112,136
15	83,92,106,170	4:2	133
15:33	154	<b>Titus 1:2</b>	28,42,66,76,106,158
<b>2 Corinthians (2 Cor)</b>		<b>Hebrews (Heb)</b>	
1:20	54	1	70
3:17	125	1:1-3	81
4	136	1:2,3	13,61,86,179
5:7	64	4:3	115,194
5:17	27	4:3,10	61
6:14-18	82,154	4:12-13	7,12
6:15	24, 68	5:9	194
10:5	28	6:18	28,76,106,158
11:3	67	8	53
<b>Galatians (Gal)</b>		9:27	7
1:15-16	84	10:31	66
6:15,16	27,53		

# SCRIPTURE REFERENCE INDEX

<b>Hebrews (Heb) cont.</b>	<b>ABOUT THE AUTHOR</b>
11:3	13,24
12:2	194
12:3	14
12:29	66
13:8	150
<b>James (Jas)</b>	
1:5	122
1:17	136
3:1	117,133
4:4	92,103
<b>2 Peter (2 Pet)</b>	
2	154-155
2:22	108
3:8	134
3:16	67
<b>1 John (1 Jn)</b>	
1:1-2	136
1:5-7	154
2:22-23	147
5:9-13	126
<b>Revelation (Rev)</b>	
1	134
1:2,9	134
2:4	70,116
3:15-16	179
4:11	186
5:9	184
12:17	134
19	134
19:9-10	134
21:8	65
21:23	136
22:13,17	10
22:18	87,103
22:18-19	29

With a face made for radio and a voice made for print, it's no wonder that he writes. And as far as credentials go, we won't need to take up much space with that either. Grade school valedictorian, high school honors graduate; college graduate: Bachelor of Science degree, majors in English and Sociology (with the weakest performance coming in Biology, truth be told). Academically, other than decades of self-directed study, that's about it.

He's worked for both the world's largest employer (the United States Government) as a "communications facilitator" (mailman), and the world's largest retailer, Walmart. In between, he spent four years at a Christian K-12 school system. Various manual labor stints and lower level management positions make up his whole work history, but he now has the time and opportunity to stay at home and "use his words."

Content with his current lot in life, he knows **Christ** has led him to this place. He is thankful for the truly amazing grace that the **Author and finisher of faith and salvation** has shown towards a thoroughly-unworthy sinner such as this book's author.

**He [Christ Jesus] became the author of eternal salvation to all who obey Him**

**...Looking unto Jesus, the author and finisher of faith...  
who made the worlds—**

**Heb 5:9, 12:2, 1:2**

## ALSO FROM THIS AUTHOR

*And Without God In This World*  
(**A**theism-**T**otalitarianism-**H**umanism)  
(*ATHEOS: 6 Paths To Destruction*  
*Volume I*)

*Out-of **The Way** Systems*  
(**O**ther Religions and **S**till-  
Future Eschatology)  
(*ATHEOS: 6 Paths To Destruction*  
*Volume III*)

Available as free PDF downloads at:

[www.trutholio.com](http://www.trutholio.com) [N.A. 2025-26; go to **sp1works.com** instead]

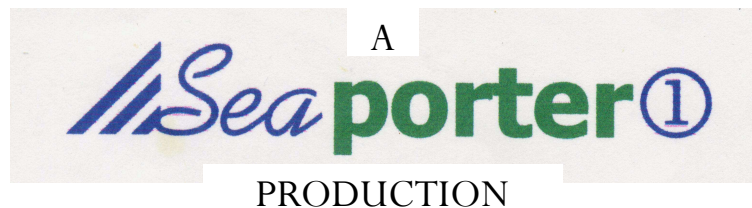
\*\*\*\*\*

If you agree that the laborer is worthy of his wages (Luke 10:7 & 1 Tim 5:18), and you have benefited in some way from any of my written works, please consider sending me any token contribution that you feel **comfortable** in sparing (that could include free books written by others). Certainly, no one *owes* me anything, but as a *personal* not-for-profit ministry of sorts (I have no income source now other than Social Security), it would be nice to get somewhere close to breaking even on publishing efforts! But in any case, I sincerely hope that the Lord has used me to open some eyes to His truth, and that more will be moved to glorify Him.

**Steve Rauen 5673 Bethel Rd SE TRLR 19A Port Orchard WA 98367**

# EVILLUSION: THE EVIL ILLUSION OF EVOLUTION

STEVE RAUEN  
APRIL, AD 2014 (UPDATED DECEMBER, 2025)



---

+ God's universe, God's rules.

+ There is One who has begun,  
and He is The Cause.

+ God defines, man opines.

+ Evolution is an evil illusion.  
There's nothing good in it and  
there's no truth in it.